

Acerca de este libro

Esta es una copia digital de un libro que, durante generaciones, se ha conservado en las estanterías de una biblioteca, hasta que Google ha decidido escanearlo como parte de un proyecto que pretende que sea posible descubrir en línea libros de todo el mundo.

Ha sobrevivido tantos años como para que los derechos de autor hayan expirado y el libro pase a ser de dominio público. El que un libro sea de dominio público significa que nunca ha estado protegido por derechos de autor, o bien que el período legal de estos derechos ya ha expirado. Es posible que una misma obra sea de dominio público en unos países y, sin embargo, no lo sea en otros. Los libros de dominio público son nuestras puertas hacia el pasado, suponen un patrimonio histórico, cultural y de conocimientos que, a menudo, resulta difícil de descubrir.

Todas las anotaciones, marcas y otras señales en los márgenes que estén presentes en el volumen original aparecerán también en este archivo como testimonio del largo viaje que el libro ha recorrido desde el editor hasta la biblioteca y, finalmente, hasta usted.

Normas de uso

Google se enorgullece de poder colaborar con distintas bibliotecas para digitalizar los materiales de dominio público a fin de hacerlos accesibles a todo el mundo. Los libros de dominio público son patrimonio de todos, nosotros somos sus humildes guardianes. No obstante, se trata de un trabajo caro. Por este motivo, y para poder ofrecer este recurso, hemos tomado medidas para evitar que se produzca un abuso por parte de terceros con fines comerciales, y hemos incluido restricciones técnicas sobre las solicitudes automatizadas.

Asimismo, le pedimos que:

+ *Haga un uso exclusivamente no comercial de estos archivos* Hemos diseñado la Búsqueda de libros de Google para el uso de particulares; como tal, le pedimos que utilice estos archivos con fines personales, y no comerciales.

+ *No envíe solicitudes automatizadas* Por favor, no envíe solicitudes automatizadas de ningún tipo al sistema de Google. Si está llevando a cabo una investigación sobre traducción automática, reconocimiento óptico de caracteres u otros campos para los que resulte útil disfrutar de acceso a una gran cantidad de texto, por favor, envíenos un mensaje. Fomentamos el uso de materiales de dominio público con estos propósitos y seguro que podremos ayudarle.

+ *Conserve la atribución* La filigrana de Google que verá en todos los archivos es fundamental para informar a los usuarios sobre este proyecto y ayudarles a encontrar materiales adicionales en la Búsqueda de libros de Google. Por favor, no la elimine.

+ *Manténgase siempre dentro de la legalidad* Sea cual sea el uso que haga de estos materiales, recuerde que es responsable de asegurarse de que todo lo que hace es legal. No dé por sentado que, por el hecho de que una obra se considere de dominio público para los usuarios de los Estados Unidos, lo será también para los usuarios de otros países. La legislación sobre derechos de autor varía de un país a otro, y no podemos facilitar información sobre si está permitido un uso específico de algún libro. Por favor, no suponga que la aparición de un libro en nuestro programa significa que se puede utilizar de igual manera en todo el mundo. La responsabilidad ante la infracción de los derechos de autor puede ser muy grave.

Acerca de la Búsqueda de libros de Google

El objetivo de Google consiste en organizar información procedente de todo el mundo y hacerla accesible y útil de forma universal. El programa de Búsqueda de libros de Google ayuda a los lectores a descubrir los libros de todo el mundo a la vez que ayuda a autores y editores a llegar a nuevas audiencias. Podrá realizar búsquedas en el texto completo de este libro en la web, en la página `http://books.google.com`

This is a reproduction of a library book that was digitized by Google as part of an ongoing effort to preserve the information in books and make it universally accessible.

Google books

https://books.google.com



Stanford University Libraries
3 6105 210 983 263

.D UNIVERSITY LIBRARIES .
STANFORD UNIVERSITY LIBRARIE
UNIVERSITY LIBRARIES . STANF
LIBRARIES . STANFORD UNIVERS
ERSITY LIBRARIES . STANFORD U
RARIES . STANFORD UNIVERSITY
NFORD UNIVERSITY LIBRARIES .
STANFORD UNIVERSITY LIBRARIE
Digitized by Google

TANFORD UNIVERSITY LIBRARIES
· STANFORD UNIVERSITY LIBRAR
D UNIVERSITY LIBRARIES · STAN
Y LIBRARIES · STANFORD UNIVE
VERSITY LIBRARIES · STANFORD
BRARIES · STANFORD UNIVERSIT
TANFORD UNIVERSITY LIBRARIES
· STANFORD UNIVERSITY LIBRAR
Digitized by Google


Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

THE BEAUTIES OF NATURE AND ART DISPLAYED, IN A TOUR THROUGH THE WORLD;

CONTAINING

I. A General Account of all the Countries in the World, remarkable for either Natural or Artificial Curiosities; their Situation, Boundaries, Extent, and Divisions; their Rivers, Air, Soil, chief Cities, &c.

II. A particular Account of the most curious natural Productions of each Country, in the Animal, Vegetable, and Fossil Kingdoms; of remarkable Mountains, Caverns and Volcanos; of Medicinal and other singular Springs; of Cararacts, Whirlpools, &c

III. An Historical Account of the most remarkable Earthquakes, Inundations, Fires, Epidemic Diseases, and other public Calamities, which have, at different Times, visited the Inhabitants.

IV. Extraordinary Instances of Longevity, Fertility, &c. among the Inhabitants; together with an Account of their most celebrated Inventions, Discoveries, &c.

V. Particular Descriptions of the most remarkable public Buildings, and other singular Productions of Art.

VI. Curious Remains of Antiquity; remarkable Laws, Customs, and Traditions of the Inhabitants; together with a Summary View of the most extraordinary Revolutions among them.

Illustrated and embellished with Copper-Plates.

The SECOND EDITION, greatly improved.

VOL. XII.

LONDON:
Printed for G. Robinson, in Pater-Noster-Row 1775.

MF178 Digitized by Google

AE4
B4
1774
v.12=13
Locked
stack

Digitized by Google

THE BEAUTIES OF NATURE AND ART DISPLAYED, IN A TOUR THROUGH THE WORLD.

CAPT. COOK'S VOYAGE round the World, in the Years 1768, 1769, and 1770, continued.

THE captain, Mr. Banks, and Dr. Solander, paid Tootahah a visit on the 27th of May, at Atahourow, about six miles beyond Tattahah, when presents were made him in form, and they received a hog in return. Oberea was here, and invited Mr. Banks to a place in her canoe for the night, which he accepted. Oberea took his clothes into her own custody, saying, they would otherwise be stolen. Thus secure, he slept with great composure; but

Digitized by Google

when he awoke his clothes were, nevertheleſs, miſſing. Oberea being awakened, and ſtarting up, ordered a light to ſearch for the clothes. Tootahah ſlept in the adjacent canoe, and being alſo alarmed, he went with Oberea in purſuit of the thief. Mr. Banks could not accompany them, as he had ſcarce any cloathing left but his breeches; his piſtols and powder-horn being gone with his coat and waiſtcoat, and though his muſket remained, it not being loaded, he was alarmed, and the more ſo, as he did not know where the captain and Dr. Solander were, and therefore could not, in caſe of danger, receive their aſſiſtance. Tootahah and Oberea had returned without being able to diſcover the thief: he reſolved, nevertheleſs, not to let them obſerve his apprehenſions, and giving the muſket in charge to Tupia, who was near, again reſigned himſelf to reſt. His repoſe was not, however, ſo ſound, but that he was waked by a concert on ſhore, which is called a *Heiva*, which is indeed a general name for all public exhibitions. The muſic induced Mr. Banks to riſe, notwithſtanding the little apparel he had to put on, and repair to the ſpot where the muſicians had aſſembled, in expectation of meeting with the captain and the doctor. He found them out, and related his melancholy caſe, when the captain appeared almoſt as diſtreſſed as himſelf, having loſt his ſtockings from under his head, and his aſſociates had each loſt a jacket. Notwithſtanding their want of cloathing, they reſolved to hear the concert, which conſiſted of three

Digitized by Google

three drums, four flutes, and several vocal performers. This performance continued about an hour, after which the gentlemen retired again to their respective lodgings. At day-break they rose, when Tupia appeared with the musket, and Oberea brought Mr. Banks some of the clothes of the country, to supply the place of his own, in which he made a whimsical appearance by the English and Indian dresses being blended. The party was soon collected, except Dr. Solander, whose quarters were unknown, as he had not attended the concert. The doctor, however, joined them about eight o'clock, without having lost any of his apparel. It was remarkable, that neither Oberea or Tootahah could be influenced to take any measures for recovering the clothes (which were never after seen) which induced the gentlemen to think that they were accomplices in the robbery.

The loss of the clothes, and the ill success of the captain and his friends, in soliciting for hogs, put them out of temper, and they returned to the boat, not a little displeased with the reception they had met with. On their return, however, in the boat, they were amused with about a dozen Indians, who were swimming for their diversion, in a place where a high surf breaks upon the shore, and where no European boat could have lived. They dived under every surf that broke near them, and rose on the other side with infinite ease. They also amused themselves with the stern of an old

Digitized by Google

canoe, playing many curious ſports in the ſea with it.

The gentlemen were viſited by ſome Indians from a neighbouring iſland called *Eimeo*, or *Imao*, which was the ſame that captain Wallis had named the *Duke of York's Iſland*; and theſe Indians gave information, that there were at leaſt 22 iſlands in the vicinity of Otaheite. Preparations were now made for the obſervation of the tranſit of Venus; Mr. Green furniſhing the gentlemen with proper inſtruments for the occaſion. In conſequence of a hint given by Lord Morton to the captain, he reſolved to detach two parties to make this obſervation, beſides that at Otaheite, leſt they ſhould fail there. Accordingly one party went to Imao; they conſiſted of Mr. Banks, Mr. Gore, Mr. Monkhouſe, Mr. Spering, and Tubourai Tamaide and Tomio. Another party, with Mr. Hicks, was ſent to the eaſtward, in order to chuſe a convenient ſpot at a proper diſtance from the chief obſervatory. Mr. Banks's party found an inlet through the reef, and fixed upon a coral rock, about 150 yards from the ſhore, where they began to fix their tents. In the mean while Mr. Banks went on ſhore upon the main land to purchaſe proviſions, and on his return found the obſervatary completely prepared for making the obſervation, Saturday, June 3. In a ſecond viſit Mr. Banks made the iſland, to examine its produce, and obtain a farther ſupply of proviſions, he learnt that two canoes which approached

Digitized by Google

proached the place belonged to Tarrao, the king of the iſland, who was coming to pay Mr. Banks a viſit. The king landed, with his ſiſter Nuna, when that gentleman went to meet them, and introduced them into a circle. which he had drawn to prevent the Indians preſſing upon him. It being cuſtomary for theſe people to ſit during their conferences, Mr. Banks took off a turban of Indian cloth, which he wore about his head, in lieu of a hat, which he ſpread upon the ground for them all to be ſeated on. The king then made him a preſent of a hog and a dog, and ſome bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, &c. In return, Mr. Banks ſent to the obſervatory for an adze, a ſhirt, and ſome beads, which were preſented to Tarrao, which he received, and teſtified his approbation at the preſent. Tubourai Tamaide and Tomio went to Mr. Banks, and the latter preſented Tarrao (whom ſhe ſaid was a relation) with a long nail, and to Nuna ſhe gave a ſhirt. Mr. Banks now took them, with all their attendants, to the obſervatory, where he ſhewed them the planet on the ſun, and endeavoured to acquaint them that he and his friends had come ſo far on purpoſe to ſee it. After the tranſit was over, he again returned to the iſland, the produce of which he found greatly to reſemble that of Otaheite, as did alſo the natives of this iſland the inhabitants of the other, ſeveral of whom he met here.

The obſervation to the eaſtward, and at the fort, were equally ſucceſsful, the ſky being quite

Digitized by Google

quite clear all day; and Mr. Green, captain Cook, and Dr. Solander obſerved the whole paſſage of the planet of Venus over the ſun's diſk very advantageouſly. An atmoſphere, or duſky cloud, was perceived to ſurround the body of the planet, which interrupted the times of contact, particularly thoſe that were internal; which made a difference in their accounts of the times of the contacts. Mr. Green's was as follows.

	H.	M.	S.	
The firſt external contact or appearance of Venus on the ſun was,	9	25	42	Morning.
The firſt internal contact, or total immerſion was,	9	44	4	Morning.
The ſecond internal contact, or beginning of the emerſion, was,	3	14	8	Afternoon.
The ſecond external contact, or total emerſion,	3	32	10	Afternoon.

The obſervatory was in lat. 17. 29. 15. S. and in long. 149. 32. 30. W. of Greenwich.

During theſe tranſactions, ſome of the crew had broke into a ſtore-room, and ſtole about a hundred weight of ſpike-nails. This affair was of a very ſerious nature, for the diſtribution of ſuch a number of nails among the natives would greatly have reduced their value, and of courſe proportionably enhanced the price of proviſions. It was, therefore, judged

judged expedient to make an example of one of the thieves, who was detected, by punishing him with two dozen lashes.

His majesty's birth-day was celebrated on the 5th of June, as on the 4th the gentlemen were separated in parties to view the transit of Venus. Several Indian chiefs assisted at the festival, and drank the king's health by the name of *Kihiargo*, which was the nearest sound they could utter like *King George*.

An elderly woman of superior rank, and a relation of Tomio, dying about this time, produced an opportunity of gratifying the gentlemen's curiosity with respect to the manner of disposing of the dead, and proved that, contrary to the custom of all other people, they do not bury them. In a small square, railed in with bamboo, the awning of a canoe was placed upon two posts, under which the body was placed on a frame similar to that already described. Bread-fruit, fish, and other provisions, were placed near it, as supposed, for the spirit of the deceased; and therefore it was imagined that these people had some idea, though confused, of a future state. But this proved a mistake, Tubourai Tamaide asserting, that these provisions were placed there as offerings to their gods, not upon a presumption that their deities eat, but to express their reverence and gratitude, and to intreat their farther protection. The relations of the deceased stood at a kind of stile as mourners upon

Digitized by Google

on the occaſion; and there were a great number of pieces of cloth beneath the awning, which had received the blood and tears of the mourners; for whilſt they are in this ſituation, a ſhark's tooth is invariably uſed to wound themſelves with. Two houſes were erected upon the occaſion, in one of theſe ſome of the relations conſtantly attended, and the other was the reſidence of the chief mourner, who is never a woman, and who has a very particular dreſs, in which a ceremony is performed which will be hereafter deſcribed. The bones, after the body is rotten, are buried in the neighbourhood of this ſquare.

From what has been related, it muſt be obſerved, that the manners, cuſtoms, and ſentiments of the Otaheitans, are very extraordinary, when compared to thoſe of moſt other people. The men and women, ſo far from concealing their amours, have public exhibitions for the rites of Venus, when the more experienced matrons give directions to the female novices, to perform their parts with dexterity. Theft and robbery are not conſidered as crimes from the higheſt to the loweſt, their chiefs being tempted by a few nails to forfeit their probity and integrity. And the ceremony, which has juſt been deſcribed, of diſpoſing of their dead, is full as extraordinary as the reſt, and cannot at this period be paralleled by any other nation upon the globe.

There

Digitized by Google

There being a ſcarcity of bread-fruit, enquiry was made into the cauſe, when it was diſcovered that great quantities had been made of a kind of ſour paſte, called *Mabie* by the natives, and which, after being fermented, may be preſerved a conſiderable time, and is a ſuccedaneum for ripe fruit, when none is to be obtained.

The funeral ceremony on account of the old woman, whoſe ſepulchral ceremony has been deſcribed, being appointed for the 10th of June, Mr. Banks's curioſity was excited to be preſent at the myſteries, and upon this occaſion he was obliged to appear as a mourner He accordingly repaired to the ſpot where the body lay, in the evening, where he was met by the deceaſed's daughter, and ſeveral of the natives, when Tubourai Tamaide was principal mourner, and appeared in a whimſical, though not unbecoming dreſs. Mr. Banks was obliged to quit his European dreſs, when a ſmall piece of cloth being tied round his middle, his body was ſmeared with charcoal and water, down from his ſhoulders. The like operation was performed upon many others, males and females; and a boy about fourteen was ſmeared all over, till he was nearly the colour of a negro. The proceſſion now began, when Tubourai Tamaide delivered a harangue, thought to be a prayer, near the corpſe; and the like was repeated when he approached his own place of abode. After this part of the ceremony, the proceſſion continued towards the

Digitized by Google

the fort, leave being firſt obtained. The natives ſhun theſe proceſſions with the greateſt precipitation; whereupon thoſe who were near the fort fled into the woods to hide themſelves. The proceſſion proceeded from the fort along the ſhore, when another body of Indians fled like the former; and it then croſſed the river, and entering the woods, paſſed ſeveral deſerted houſes. Mr. Banks filled the office of *Nineveh*, in which character two of the Indians alſo appeared, and uttered to the chief mourner the word *Imatata*, ſignifying, none of the Indians were viſible. After which thoſe who had aſſiſted in the proceſſion retired to bathe, and then reſumed their former habits.

The natives with their bows and arrows do not aim to hit a mark, but plume themſelves upon ſending their arrows to a great diſtance. Tubourai Tamaide gave a proof of his abilities this way, in ſending an unfeathered arrow 274 yards. This was performed kneeling, and as ſoon as the arrow was diſcharged, he dropt the bow.

Several itinerant muſicians were met with, an appointment was made to meet them again in the evening. They conſiſted of two flutes and three drums; the latter accompanied their performance with their voices, and it was diſcovered, that what they ſung extemporaneouſly related to the gentlemen preſent. Such were the bards or minſtrels of this iſland, who were recompenced by the hoſt where they played, and

Digitized by Google

and the company, with such things as they stood in need of.

The natives still continued to shew their dexterity at purloining; and the captain, in order to deter them from this pursuit, seized several of their canoes laden with fish, and threatened to burn them, unless the things stolen were restored. However, from motives of humanity, the captain did not detain the fish, that the innocent might not suffer with the guilty; and at length, from the same motive, he restored the canoes.

Mr. Monkhouse received a blow from an Indian for having plucked a flower from a tree in a sepulchral inclosure. This gentleman resented it, by seizing the Indian; but he was rescued by two others, who pulled Mr. Monkhouse by the hair, and compelled him to resign his prisoner.

In a conference with Oberea, she declared that her favourite, Obadee, was the culprit who had taken the things for which the canoes were detained, and that she had, in consequence, beat and dismissed him. She appeared under much consternation, and did not seem to think she should be believed. Nevertheless, she was desirous of sleeping in Mr. Banks's tent, with her attendants, but her request was not complied with. She returned the next day, and with great fortitude put herself wholly in the power of the English; and at

 the

Digitized by Google

the ſame time preſented them with a hog, a dog, and other things. Dogs being eſteemed more delicate food than pork, an experiment was tried, and Tupia was charged with the taſk of cooking it, after killing him, by preſſing with his hands the dog's mouth and noſe, and thereby ſtifling him. A hole was then made in the ground, and a fire kindled in it. The dog being now ſinged, and ſcraped with a ſhell quite clean, was cut up alſo with the ſhell, and his entrails taken out and cleanſed; they were put into the ſhells of cocoa-nuts, with the blood. The oven being heated, the fire was taken out, and ſome ſtones placed at the bottom, and covered with green leaves, and then the dog was put in, and covered with other hot ſtones, and the mouth of the oven was cloſed with mould. In about four hours the dog was baked, and proved very good eating. Theſe dogs do not feed on animal food, but ſolely on bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, yams, &c. This manner of dreſſing their food is followed by all the natives.

June 21, the gentlemen received a viſit from a chief named *Oamo*, who was a perfect ſtranger. He was accompanied by a boy about ſeven years of age, and a girl about ſixteen. The boy was conveyed on the back of a man, though he was very capable of walking. When they were within view of Oberea, ſeveral of the Indians went forth to join them, firſt obſerving to uncover their heads and bodies as low

Digitized by Google

low as their waiſts, and the reſt of the Indians without the fort followed their example. Uncovering the body, in this country, may be a mark of reſpect; and as it is entirely expoſed, the ceremony of uncovering it only from the waiſt towards the feet, as done by Ooratooa, might be only a different compliment to perſons of a ſuperior rank. The chief entered the tent, but the young woman could not be prevailed upon to follow him, though ſhe ſeemed inclined to it; the natives being all ſolicitous to prevent her, and at times, when her reſolution appeared to fail, almoſt uſing force: the boy they likewiſe reſtricted in the ſame manner; but Dr. Solander meeting him at the gate, took him by the hand, and led him in; but thoſe who were within immediately ſent him out.

The gentlemen's curioſity being thus excited, they enquired concerning them, and learnt that Oamo was Oberea's huſband; that they had been ſeparated by mutual conſent; and that the young woman and the boy were their iſſue. They likewiſe learnt, that the boy, whoſe name was *Terridiri*, was ſovereign heir apparent of the iſland, and that his ſiſter was intended for his wife, the marriage being ſolely deferred on account of his youth. The ſovereign, at this juncture, was a ſon of Whappai, named Outou, and was a minor. Whappai, Oamo, and Tootahah, were brothers; Whappai was the ſenior, and Oamo the ſecond; and Whappai having no child but Outou, Terridiri, his

Digitized by Google

brother Oamo's ſon, was heir to the ſovereignty. It may ſeem extraordinary that a boy ſhould be ſoverign during his father's life; but, by the cuſtom of the country, a child ſucceeds to a father's title and authority as ſoon as born: a regent is at that time appointed, and the ſovereign's father is uſually continued in his authority, bearing that title till his ſon is of age; but, at this period, the choice had fallen upon T'ootàhah, uncle of the ſovereign, on account of his warlike feats. Oamo was very inquiſitive about England, when he diſplayed an uncommon ſhare of ſenſe and acuteneſs.

On the 26th of June, early in the morning, the captain went with Mr. Banks, to make the tour of the iſland, in order to ſurvey the harbours and coaſt. They ſailed to the eaſtward, and went on ſhore in a diſtrict called *Oabounue*, that is governed by Ahio, a young chief, who had often been at the tents. Here they likewiſe met with two other natives of their acquaintance, named *Titaboalo*, and *Hoona*, who carried them to their houſes, when they ſaw the body of the old woman, at whoſe funeral Mr. Banks had aſſiſted, and which had been moved from the ſpot where it was firſt placed, this ſpot having deſcended from her by inheritance to Hoona, wherefore it became neceſſary that it ſhould remain here. They then went on foot to the harbour wherein Mr. Bougainville lay, called *Obidea*, where they ſaw the ground upon which he pitched his tent, and

Digitized by Google

and the brook at which he watered, though no trace of them remained, beſides the holes where the poles of the tent had been fixed, and a ſmall piece of potſherd, which Mr. Banks diſcovered. They found Orette, a chief who was their friend, and whoſe brother Outorrou went away with them.

This harbour is on the weſt ſide of an extenſive bay, ſheltered by a ſmall iſland named *Boouroa*, near which is another called *Tuawirrii*; the breach in the reefs is here very large, but the ſhelter for the ſhips is indifferent.

They examined this ſpot, and took boat, aſking Tituboalo to accompany them to the other ſide of the bay; but he would not conſent, and indeed adviſed them not to go, ſaying, the country was inhabited by people who were not ſubject to Tootahah, and who would deſtroy all that came near them. This intelligence did not deter them, and they immediately loaded their pieces with ball, which now induced Tituboala to go with them.

They reached a low neck of land, at the extremity of the bay, which divides the iſland into two peninſulas, being ſeparate diſtricts or governments, entirely independent of each other. They reſolved to lie on ſhore, and landed: though they found but few houſes, there were ſeveral double canoes, whoſe owners they knew, and who provided them with entertainment and lodging. Mr. Banks, in-

Digitized by Google

deed. was indebted for his ſhare to the lady named *Oratooa*, who at the fort had ſingularly complimented him.

They examined the country next morning, and found it to be a marſhy flat, near two miles acroſs, over which the natives haul their canoes to the oppoſite bay. They now propoſed continuing their rout for what Tituboalo called the other kingdom, which he named *Tiarrabou*, or *Otaheite Ete*, and the chief who governed it he called *Waheatua*, and the name of the peninſula where they were was *Opoureonu*, or *Otaheite Nue*. Their new companion appeared to be in better ſpirits than he had been the day before; he now ſaid, the people in Tiarrabou would not deſtroy them, but added, that they ſhould not be able to procure any proviſions; which they were induced to believe, as they had ſeen no bread-fruit ſince their departure.

They rowed a few miles, and landed in a diſtrict, which belonged to a chief named *Maraitata*, the burying-place of men, whoſe father was called *Pahairede*, or the ſtealer of boats. Notwithſtanding theſe appellations appeared to favour the intelligence that had been given by Tituboalo, they preſently diſcovered that it was not founded in truth. The father and the ſon gave them a very civil reception, as well as proviſions, and ſold them a very large hog for a hatchet. A group ſoon gathered about them, but they diſcovered only two whom

Digitized by Google

whom they knew; not a ſingle bead or ornament was perceived among them that they had given them, though they ſaw many things which had been brought from Europe. In one houſe there were two twelve-pound ſhot, one of which had the broad arrow of England, tho' they ſaid they had them from Bougainville.

They repaired on foot to the diſtrict under the government of the principal chief of the peninſula, named *Wabrau*. He had a ſon, but whether he adminiſtered the government in quality of regent, or in his own right, could not be determined. Here was a large and fertile plain, watered by a wide river, which they ferried over in a canoe; their Indian aſſociates, however, choſe to ſwim, which they did with the utmoſt facility. No houſe was viſible that appeared to be inhabited, but there were the ruins of many. They continued to walk along the ſhore, which forms a bay, named *Matipeha*, and at length they found the king ſitting near ſome canoe awnings, under which it was imagined that he and his attendants ſlept. He was a meagre old man, with a white head and beard, and had by him a comely young woman, called *Toudidde*. The name of this woman was quite familiar to them, and they judged that ſhe was the queen of this peninſula. Between this place and the iſthmus there are ſeveral harbours formed by the reefs along the ſhore, where ſhipping may lie in the greateſt ſecurity, and from whence the land tends S. S. E. and S. to the S. E. part of the iſland.

Digitized by Google

iſland. Tearee, the ſon of Waheatua, was with them; they purchaſed a hog from him. The country through which they paſſed appeared to be better cultivated than any they had obſerved in other parts of the iſland: the brooks were banked with ſtone, into narrow channels, and the ſhore was likewiſe faced with ſtone, where the ſea waſhed it. There were but few houſes, and theſe were ſmall; but great numbers of canoes were hauled up along the ſhore, which were ſuperior to any that they had yet ſeen, both in ſize and conſtruction; they were longer, the ſterns were higher, and the awnings were ſuſtained by pillars. There was a ſepulchral erection at many points, and there were many of them likewiſe in land. They reſembled thoſe in Opoureonu, but they were far neater, and ornamented with many carvings, at the ſummit of which were figures of men and birds; there was one peculiarly remarkable for the repreſentation of a cock, painted red and yellow. This part of the country did not afford the ſight of a ſingle bread-fruit; the trees were bare, and the inhabitants appeared chiefly to ſubſiſt upon nuts which reſembled cheſnuts, named *abee*.

At length they called up the boat, but neither of the Indians, Tituboalo and Tuahow, were to be found: they had remained at Waheatua's, expecting us to return.

Being in want of proviſions, Mr. Banks went into the woods, in hopes of obtaining ſome;

Digitized by Google

ſome; but it being dark, he met with no inhabitants, except in one houſe. A bread-fruit and a half, and a few ahees, were all that could be obtained.

Wedneſday, June 28, in the morning, after paſſing ſome time in another unſucceſsful attempt to procure a ſupply of proviſions, they ſtretched round the ſouth-eaſt point, part of which lies open to the ſea, where the hill riſes immediately from the ſhore. Towards the ſouthermoſt extremity of the iſland, it is again covered by a reef, which forms a good harbour; and the environs are very fruitful. This route was at one time taken on foot, and at others in the boat. They reached a place where they ſaw ſeveral large canoes, and a number of natives with whom they were well acquainted. It was with difficulty they obtained ſome cocoa-nuts, after which they embarked, taking with them Tuahow, who had returned the night before.

They went on ſhore on the S. E. ſide of the iſland, by the advice of their Indian guide, who informed them that the country was fertile and fine. Mathiabo, the chief, ſoon came down to them, but appeared to be an entire ſtranger as well to them as to their trade: his dependants, nevertheleſs, brought them cocoa-nuts and bread-fruit in abundance. The bread-fruit was, however, purchaſed at a very exorbitant rate; but the chief ſold them a pig for a glaſs bottle, which he preferred to every other

Digitized by Google

other thing. He had in his poſſeſſion a gooſe and a turkey-cock, which had been left by the Dolphin: they were both extremely fat, and ſo very tame, that they followed the natives, who were extremely fond of them.

Here was a long houſe, at one end of which hung ſeveral human jaw-bones, which had all their teeth; but they could get no explanation of the meaning of this extraordinary exhibition.

After leaving this place, Mathiabo begged to accompany them, which was readily complied with, and he continued with them the remainder of the day, and aſſiſted in piloting them over the ſhoals. Towards the evening they entered the bay on the north-weſt ſide of the iſland, which correſponded with that on the ſouth-eaſt, and almoſt interſected the iſland, and after coaſting about two thirds of it, they reſolved to go on ſhore to paſs the night. A large houſe at ſome diſtance appeared, which, Mathiabo ſaid, belonged to one of his friends; and ſeveral canoes came off with ſome very handſome women, who ſeemed to have been ſent to entice them on ſhore. Having before reſolved to take up their lodging here, little invitation was neceſſary. The houſe belonged to Wiverou, chief of the diſtrict, who gave them a very friendly reception, and his people aſſiſted them in dreſſing their proviſion. When ſupper was ready, they were introduced to Wiverou, who was ſitting to eat it, and Mathiabo was preſent at the repaſt.

Digitized by Google

repaſt. Their apartment for reſt being ſhewn them, Mr. Banks began to undreſs, and ſent his cloaths aboard the boat, intending to cover himſelf with ſome Indian cloth. Mathiabo now pretended to want a cloak, which he obtained, and ſoon after diſappeared with it. It being impoſſible for them to purſue the thief with any hope of ſucceſs, Mr. Banks ſtarted up, and telling their caſe to the people, required them to recover the cloak, and ſhewed one of his pocket-piſtols, which he always kept about him. Whereupon the whole company took the alarm, and, with great precipitation, left the place; one of them, however, was ſeized, upon which he immediately offered to point out the purſuit. The captain, therefore, ſet out with Mr. Banks, and in about ten minutes they met a man bringing back the cloak, which the thief had given up; and as they did not think fit to continue the purſuit, he eſcaped. When they returned, they found the houſe entirely deſerted; but upon its being known that they had no reſentment, except againſt Mathiabou, the chief, Wiverou, their hoſt, with his wife, and many others, returned, and remained with them all night. About five o'clock in the morning their ſentry alarmed them, telling them the boat was not to be found: he had obſerved her, he added, about half an hour before, about fifty yards from the ſhore, but ſhe ſoon after diſappeared. Their ſituation was now very alarming, as they were but four, with only one muſquet and two pocket piſtols, without a ſpare ball or charge

of

Digitized by Google

of powder for either. Thus they remained for a conſiderable time, reaſonably expecting the Indians would improve their advantage, when, to their great ſatisfaction, they ſaw the boat return, which had been driven away by the tide, a circumſtance which they had not thought of.

They next landed in a diſtrict which was governed by a chief whoſe name was *Omoe*. He was building a houſe, and wanting a hatchet, he would have given any price for it; but unfortunately for him and them, they had not one hatchet left. Nails he rejected, and they therefore reimbarked, and put off their boat, and the chief, with his wife Whanno-Ouda, followed them. They took them into the boat, and, after rowing a league, they deſired they would put aſhore: to this requeſt they complied, and found ſome of his people, who had a remarkable large hog, for which they agreed to give an axe and a nail.

We ſaw a very remarkable curioſity: it was the figure of a man, conſtructed of baſket-work, roughly made, but tolerably deſigned; it was above ſeven feet high, and too bulky in proportion. It was entirely covered with white feathers where the ſkin was to appear, and black where they uſually paint or ſtain, as well as upon the head. On the head were likewiſe four protuberances, three in front, and one behind, which the Indians called *Tate Ete*, little men. It was called *Maniee*, and was, according

Digitized by Google

according to report, the only one of the kind in Otaheite.. An explanation of its uſe and deſign was attempted by the natives, but not knowing enough of their language to underſtand them, they could only diſcover that it was a repreſentation of Mauwe, one of their Etuas, or ſecond-rate gods.

They now proceeded on their return, and preſently reached Opoureonu, the north-weſt peninſula. Here they went on ſhore again, but the only thing worthy notice was a repoſitory for the dead different from what they had hitherto ſeen: the pavement was perfectly neat, upon which was a pyramid, near five feet high, covered with the fruits of two plants. A ſmall image of ſtone was near it, and which was the firſt inſtance of carving in ſtone that they had ſeen. The natives ſet a high value upon it, and therefore covered it from the weather by a ſhed.

The only harbour, on the ſouth-ſide of Opoureonu, that is fit for ſhipping, is ſituated about five miles to the weſtward of the iſthmus, between two ſmall iſlands not far from the ſhore, and near a mile diſtant from each other, where there is good anchorage. They were now in the neighbourhood of the diſtrict of Paparra, in poſſeſſion of Oamo and Oberea. Upon their landing they found that they were both abſent, being upon a viſit at Matavai: they nevertheleſs took up their lodging at the houſe of Oberea, which was very neat,

Digitized by Google

and her father gave them a hearty welcome. They then walked out to a point, upon which were trees called *Etoo*, which usually distinguish the burying-places of the bones of their dead, which are also places of worship, and are called *Morai*. An enormous pile appeared, which, they were told, was the morai of Oamo and Oberea, and the most capital piece of architecture in the island. It consisted of a pile of stone work, constructed pyramidically on an oblong base, or square, two hundred and sixty-seven feet in length, and eighty-seven in width. It was constructed like the small pyramidal mounts upon which we frequently fix a sun-dial, on each side of which is a flight of steps; the steps at the sides were broader than those at the extremities, whereby it terminated in a ridge, resembling the roof of a common house: eleven of these steps, four feet high each, rendered the height of the pile forty-four feet: every step was formed of a coarse white coral stone, neatly squared and polished; the rest of the mass, there being no hollow within, consisted of round pebbles, which seemed to have been wrought. Many of the coral stones were very large; one of which measured three feet and an half by two feet and an half. The basis was of rock stones, which were also squared; and one of them was of the dimensions of four feet seven inches by two feet four. This structure, erected without iron tools to shape the stones, or mortar, was a matter of astonishment; it seemed to be as regular and firm as it could

have

Digitized by Google

have been made by European workmen, except that the ſteps are not completely ſtrait, but ſink in a kind of hollow in the middle, whereby the whole ſurface is rather a curve than a right line. As no quarry was ſeen in the neighbourhood, the ſtones muſt have been brought from a conſiderable diſtance; and no method of conveyance is known here but by hand: the coral muſt therefore have been fiſhed from under the water, where, though it may be met with in plenty, it lies at a conſiderable depth, never leſs than three feet. The rock ſtone, as well as the coral, could be ſquared only by tools made of the like ſubſtance, which muſt have been an operation of conſiderable labour; but the poliſhing was more readily performed by means of the coral ſand, which is every where to be met with upon the ſea-ſhore. In the center of the top was the image of a bird carved in wood; and near it a broken one, reſembling a fiſh, carved in ſtone. This pyramid formed part of one ſide of a ſpacious ſquare, nearly of equal dimenſions, which was circumſcribed with a ſtone wall, and entirely paved with flat ſtones; though there were growing in it, notwithſtanding the pavement, many trees which are called etoa, or plantains. At the diſtance of about a hundred yards to the weſt of this erection, was another paved area or court, wherein were ſeveral ſtages erected on wooden pillars, near ſeven feet high, which are called *Ewattas*, and appear to be altars, as hereupon are placed proviſions of all ſorts, as offerings

Digitized by Google

to their gods. They had alſo ſeen whoſe hogs placed upon them, and found the ſculls of above fifty, beſides dogs ſculls innumerable.

The chief object among theſe Indians is a magnificent morai, and this was a ſtriking proof of the rank and influence of Oberea. It has been obſerved, that ſhe was not found inveſted with the ſame authority that ſhe exerted when the Dolphin was here, and the reaſon was explained. The way from her houſe to the morai was along the ſea-ſide, and they remarked every where a great number of human bones, principally ribs and vertebræ. The cauſe of ſo ſingular an appearance, they were told, was, that in the then laſt month of Owarahew, or December, 1768, near four or five months before their arrival, the people of Tiarrabou, that is, the S. E. peninſula, lately viſited, made a deſcent at this place, and killed a great number of people, whoſe bones were thoſe obſerved upon the ſhore: that Oberea and Oamo, who then held the reins of government for his ſon, had retired to the mountains; when all the houſes were deſtroyed by the conquerors, who carried away the hogs, and other animals. They likewiſe learnt, that the turkey and gooſe which they had ſeen when they were with Mathiabo, were among the ſpoils. This accounted for finding them among people with whom the Dolphin had ſcarce any communication; and they were now informed, that the jaw-bones

Digitized by Google

bones that were hung up were carried away as trophies.

Their curiosity being thus gratified, they returned, and passed the night without the least interruption. The next evening they reached Atahourou, the residence of Tootahah, where they had passed the night under his protection, and had been obliged to leave great part of their clothes behind; but no notice was now taken of this adventure by either party. Their friends received them with much pleasure, and provided a good supper and lodging, and no accident happened as before.

Saturday, July the 1st, they returned to the fort at Matavai, after making the circuit of the island, and both peninsulas, which was about thirty leagues in circumference. There was a scarcity of bread-fruit, the produce of the last season being nearly exhausted, and the present crop would not be fit for use in less than three months.

During the bread-fruit's ripening upon the flats, the natives are in some degree furnished from the trees planted upon the hills to preserve a succession; but this supply is not sufficient to prevent a dearth: they therefore live upon the sour paste called *Mahie*, upon wild plantains, and ahee nuts, which at this time are ripe. The Dolphin, which was here at this season, found plenty of bread-fruit upon

Digitized by Google

the trees; but captain Cook cannot account for this, unleſs the ſeaſons vary.

Their Indian friends crouded about them at their return, and all brought ſome kind of proviſions. The captain had reſolved to reſtore the canoes to their owners, and he now releaſed them, upon application being made for that purpoſe. It was obſerved that the Indians were capable of practiſing frauds againſt each other with a deliberate plan, which gave Mr. Cook a much worſe opinion of them than he had before entertained, from the thefts they had been guilty of, under the irreſiſtible temptation to which the opportunity of obtaining the ineſtimable metal of iron laid them under.

Potattow, a man of ſome conſequence, among others applied for the reſtoration of a canoe. Mr. Cook conſented, imagining the veſſel to be really his property, or that of a friend: he repaired immediately to the beach, and took poſſeſſion of it, which he began to carry off. But it was ſtrenuouſly claimed by the right owners, who, with the other Indians, vehemently reproached him for invading their property, and were upon the point of ſeizing by force the canoe. Whereupon he deſired to acquaint them, that the canoe did, indeed, once belong to the claimants; but that it being ſeized as a forfeit, it was ſold for a pig. This ſilenced the clamour, the owners knowing that from the captain's power there was

Digitized by Google

was no appeal, were obliged to submit; and Potattow would have retired with his prize, if the conteſt had not been overheard by ſome of Mr. Cook's people, who reported it to him. He immediately gave orders that the Indians ſhould be undeceived; whereupon the right owners regained their canoe, and Potattow was ſo ſenſible of his iniquity, that neither he nor his wife, who was in the ſecret, could look them in the face for ſome time.

Mr. Banks ſet out early in the morning of the 3d of July, with ſome Indian guides, to trace the river up the valley to its ſource, and find at what diſtance its banks were inhabited. They met with houſes for near ſix miles, at no great diſtance from each other, on both ſides of the river, and the valley was in moſt places about four hundred yards in breadth, from the foot of the hill on one ſide, to the foot of that on the other. They now came to a houſe, which they were informed was the laſt that they would meet with. Upon their approaching it, the hoſt offered them refreſhments, which they accepted: after ſojourning ſome time, they walked forward about ſix miles farther, following the courſe of the river, when they often paſſed under vaults, formed by fragments of the rock, where, they were informed, people that were benighted often paſſed the night. They preſently found the river banked by ſteep rocks, from whence a caſcade falling violently formed a ſteep pool, which the Indians could not paſs. They

appeared,

Digitized by Google

appeared, indeed, not to be well acquainted with the valley beyond this place, their intercourse being principally upon the declivity of the rocks on both sides, and the plains which extended on their tops, where was found plenty of a wild plantain, called *Vae*. The only method these rocks can be ascended from the river is in every respect tremendous; the sides being almost perpendicular, and in some parts near a hundred feet high; they were likewise exceeding slippery, by the water of various springs; a track was nevertheless traced, by long pieces of the bark of the hibiscus tiliaceus, which was used as a rope for the person who attempted to gain the summit, which assisted him in climbing from one ledge to another: upon these ledges there was footing only for one man. Some of these ropes were at least thirty feet in length, and their guides proposed to assist them in mounting, but recommended another pass, at a little distance lower down, as more easy and less dangerous. They took a view of this superior way, but found it so indifferent, that they did not chuse to attempt it, as there was nothing at the top to requite their toil and hazard but a grove of the wild plantain or vae tree, no uncommon sight elsewhere. In this excursion Mr. Banks had a fine opportunity of viewing the rocks, which produced few if any minerals, as he discovered not the least appearance of any. The stones resembled in all places those of Madeira, having apparently been burnt, except where there

Digitized by Google

there were some small pieces of the hatchet-stone, and even some of these fragments were collected that were burnt nearly to a pumice. There are even traces of fire in the clay upon the hills; and it may reasonably be supposed, that this, and the adjoining islands, are either shattered remains of a continent, which has been supposed necessary in this part of the globe, to preserve an equilibrium of its parts, which were left behind when the remainder sunk by the mining of a subterraneous fire, so as to give a passage to the sea over it; or were divided from rocks, which, from the remotest times formed the bed of the sea, and cast up to a height beyond the reach of the waters. One or other of these suppositions will perhaps be judged the more probable, as the water does not grow shallow by degrees as the shore is approached, and the islands are almost in all places surrounded by reefs, which appear to be rude and irregular, as some violent concussion would, as it may be naturally supposed, leave the solid substance of the globe. Upon this occasion it may likewise be remarked, that the most probable cause of earthquakes appears to be, the impetuous forcing in of water upon some extensive mass of subterraneous fire, by the momentary rarefaction of which into vapour, the mine springs, and various substances, in all degrees of vitrification, with shells, and other similar productions, that are now found fossil, and the strata that covered the furnace are cast up; whilst those parts of the earth which were sustained upon the broken shell give

Digitized by Google

give way, and ſink into the opening. This theory ſeems to be reconciled with the phenomena of all earthquakes; pools are often ſeen where land has ſubſided, and different ſubſtances, which appear to have ſuffered by fire, are caſt up. Fire cannot, indeed, ſubſiſt without air; but, nevertheleſs, there certainly is fire below the bed of the ſea; as there may be various fiſſures whereby a communication between thoſe parts and the external air may be maintained.

Mr. Banks, on the 4th of July, planted a great quantity of water-melon ſeeds, oranges, lemons, limes, and other plants and trees which he had brought from Rio de Janeiro. He prepared ground on the ſides of the fort for them, with as many varieties of ſoil as he could find; and there is the greateſt reaſon to think that they will not fail. Of theſe ſeeds he alſo gave great quantities to the natives, and planted many of them in the woods: ſome of the melon ſeeds having been planted ſoon after their arrival, the Indians ſhewed him many of the plants which ſeemed to be in a very flouriſhing ſtate, and often requeſted an additional ſtock.

They now began to make preparations for their departure. They had, in the interim, another viſit from Oamo, Oberea, and their ſon and daughter; the Indians teſtifying their reſpect by uncovering the upper parts of their body. Toimata, the daughter, was very ſolicitous

Digitized by Google

ſitous to ſee the fort, but Oamo would not allow her to come in. Tearee, ſon of Waheatua, and ſovereign of Tiarrabou, the ſouth-eaſt peninſula, was alſo with the gentlemen at this period; and they received advice of the landing of another gueſt, whoſe company was not agreeable; this was the perſon who contrived to ſteal the quadrant. They were informed that he propoſed exerting his abilities in the purloining way once more; but the Indians all agreed to oppoſe his deſigns, requeſting to that end that they might be allowed to remain in the fort, which had the deſired effect.

A ſkirmiſh happened between a foreign ſailor and an Indian, on account of the loſs of a knife. The ſailor was wounded, and the Indians fled into the mountains.

Two young marines both retired privately from the fort, and in the morning were not to be met with. Notice having been given, that all hands were to go on board on the ſucceeding day, as the ſhip was to ſet ſail on the morrow, Mr. Cook began to apprehend that the abſentees deſigned to remain behind. He knew that he could take no method to recover them, without interrupting the harmony and good underſtanding which at preſent ſubſiſted between them and the natives; and, therefore, reſolved to wait a day in hopes of their appearance.

On

Digitized by Google

On the 10th, the marines not being returned, enquiry was made after them, and the natives ſaid, that they did not intend to return, and had taken an aſylum in the mountains, where it was impoſſible to trace them. The Indians were now deſired to lend aſſiſtance in the ſearch, and two of them engaged to conduct ſuch perſons as the captain ſhould judge proper to ſend in purſuit of them. Being without arms, Mr. Cook judged two would be ſufficient, and only diſpatched a petty officer and the corporal of the marines. The captain being informed that they had each of them taken a wife, and were inhabitants of the country, it was ſignified to the chiefs and women who were in the fort, among whom were Tubourai Tamaide, Tomio, and Oberea, that they muſt remain there till the deſerters returned. Mr. Hicks was diſpatched in the pinnace to bring Tootahah on board, which he did with much facility. Tubourai Tamaide, Oberea, and ſome others, were taken on board the ſhip. A general alarm enſued, and ſeveral of them, particularly the women, expreſſed their fears with great emotion.

In the evening one of the marines was brought back by the Indians, who declared that the other, and the petty officer and corporal, would be detained till Tootahah was ſet at liberty. Mr. Cook accordingly diſpatched Mr. Hicks, with a ſtrong party of men, to recover the priſoners, and informed Tootahah

Digitized by Google

Tootahah that it was neceſſary he ſhould ſend ſome of his people to give them aſſiſtance, and to demand the releaſe of the men in his name: to which he readily complied, and the men were reſcued without the leaſt difficulty; and the chiefs and their wives were no longer confined.

On this occaſion they expreſſed their joy by great liberality, deſiring the gentlemen to accept of four hogs. They were rejected as a preſent, and the Indians refuſing to be paid for them, accordingly they were not accepted. It appeared the deſerters had formed a connection with two girls, and it was their deſign to conceal themſelves till the ſhip had ſailed, and remain behind.

Tupia had been the firſt miniſter of Oberea, when ſhe was in the height of her power; he was likewiſe the chief tahowa or prieſt of the iſland, and therefore was well acquainted with the religion of the country, in reſpect to its ceremonies and principles. Navigation he was alſo acquainted with, and knew the number and ſituation of the adjacent iſlands. He had often expreſſed a deſire to go with Mr. Cook, and on the 12th he came on board, with a youth, his ſervant, and intreated the captain to let him proceed on the voyage. His company was deſirable for various reaſons; in learning his language, and teaching him Engliſh, the gentlemen would be able to acquire a far more competent knowledge of the cuſtoms, policy,

Digitized by Google

and religion of the people, than their ſhort ſtay among them could give them. Mr. Cook, therefore, readily agreed to accept of their company. Tupia went once more on ſhore, and took with him a miniature picture of Mr. Banks, to ſhew his acquaintance, and ſeveral trifles by way of preſents for them.

Mr. Banks being willing to procure a drawing of Tootahah's morai at Eparre, Mr. Cook accompanied him thither, with Dr. Solander. When they landed, many friendly Indians came to meet them, though ſome were abſent on account of what had happened the preceding day. They repaired to Tootahah's houſe, where they met with Oberea and others, when a perfect reconciliation took place, and the natives promiſed to viſit them next day, to take a laſt farewel, as they were informed that the ſhip would ſet ſail in the afternoon. Here they alſo found Tupia, who returned with them, and ſlept on board the ſhip.

On the 13th of July, the ſhip was crouded with their friends; and a multitude of canoes, which were filled with the natives of an inferior claſs, came round it. They weighed anchor about noon, and when the ſhip was under ſail, the natives on board took leave, weeping with a ſilent ſorrow, in which there was ſomething uncommonly ſympathetic and affecting, whilſt the Indians in the canoes vied with each other in the loudneſs of their lamentations,

Digitized by Google

tions, which could be considered only as affectation. Tupia behaved, in this situation, with uncommon fortitude and resolution: he indeed wept, but the attempt he made to conceal his tears gave an additional gloss to his firmness. He sent a shirt, by Otheothea, to Potomai, Tootahah's mistress, and then accompanied Mr. Banks to the mast-head, waving to the canoes as long as they continued visible.

July 13, they left Otaheite, after remaining exactly three months; living for the greater part of the time in the most cordial friendship with the natives. The casual misunderstandings which happened were sincerely regretted by both parties, arising chiefly from their circumstances and situation, added to the infirmities of human nature, from their not perfectly understanding each other, and from the propensity of the natives to theft. These misunderstandings were, however, only in one instance, attended with any ill consequence; and to that accident were owing the measures taken to prevent others of the like nature.

The most advantageous articles for trade here are axes, hatchets, spikes, large nails, looking-glasses, knives, and beads, for which the natives will barter any thing they are possessed of. They also like fine linen cloth, either printed or white; but an ax of half a crown value will produce more than a piece of cloth worth above a pound sterling.

Digitized by Google

The longitude of Port-Royal bay, in this iſland, was found to be within half a degree as ſettled by Captain Wallis. Point Venus, the northern extremity of the iſland, and the eaſtern point of the bay, is in the longitude of 149. 30. Otaheite is ſurrounded by a reef of coral rock, by which ſeveral good bays and harbours are formed, ſome of which have been already deſcribed, where there is good anchorage for ſhips of any burthen. Port-Royal bay is by the natives called Matavai, and is not inferior to any in the iſland; it is diſtinguiſhed by a very high mountain in the center of it, and bears due ſouth from Point-Venus. On the eaſtern ſide of the bay is the beſt anchoring. Here is a fine ſandy beach, and behind runs a river of good freſh water; but there is no other wood for firing upon the whole iſland, except fruit-trees, which muſt be purchaſed, or elſe the natives will be greatly diſpleaſed.

The country is in general very uneven and mountainous: between theſe ridges and the ſea there is a border of low land, which ſurrounds almoſt the whole iſland: this border is in different parts of various breadths. The ſoil is in general rich and fertile, well watered by various rivulets, and covered with fruit-trees of different kinds, ſome of which are high, and the leaves ſo numerous as to form a continued wood: and even the ſummits of the ridges, though in general they are bare, and burnt

Digitized by Google

burnt up by the ſun, are, in ſome places, fruitful.

The low land between the ridges and the ſea, and a few of the vallies, are the only parts that are inhabited, and here the natives are very numerous: the houſes are ranged along the border, at the diſtance of near fifty yards from each other, having ſmall plantations of plantains, from which they get their cloth. Tupia ſaid the iſland could furniſh ſix thouſand ſeven hundred and eighty fighting men, from which the number of inhabitants may be computed.

The produce of this iſland is bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, bananas of various ſorts, the beſt they had met with; plantains, which reſemble an apple, ſweet potatoes, yams, cocoas, a kind of arum; a fruit called jambu, and eſteemed very delicious; ſugar-cane, which they eat raw; a root of the ſalop kind, named pea; a plant called ethee, the root of which only is eaten; a fruit that grows in a pod, reſembling a large kidney-bean, which, when roaſted, eats like a cheſnut, and is called ahee; a wharra tree, called in the Eaſt Indies pandanes, which produces fruit reſembling the pine-apple; a ſhrub called nono; the morinda, which likewiſe produces fruit; a kind of fern, the root of which is eaten, and ſometimes the leaves; and a plant called theve, of this the root is likewiſe eaten; but the fruits of the fern, the nono, and the theve, are eaten

Digitized by Google

only by the lower ſort of people, when there is a ſcarcity. Theſe are all produced ſpontaneouſly, or with very little cultivation. Here is alſo the Chineſe paper mulberry, or morus papyrifera, which they call aouta, and is like the wild fig-tree of the Weſt Indies; another kind of fig, which they named matte; the cordia ſebeſtina orientalis, which the natives call etou; a kind of Cyperus graſs, named moo; a ſpecies of tournefortia, named taheinoo; another of the convolvulus poluce, called Eurhe; the ſolanum centifolium, which they name ebooa; the calophyllum mophylum, called tamannu; the hibiſcus tiliaceus, which they name poerou, a fruteſcent nettle; the urtica argentea, called erowa, and a variety of other plants, which cannot be particularized.

Here is no European fruit, garden-ſtuff, pulſe, or legumes, nor grain of any kind.

Their tame animals are hogs, dogs, and poultry, and not a wild animal, except ducks, pigeons, paroquets, with a few other birds, and rats; neither is there any other quadruped, nor any ſerpent. The ſea affords great variety of fine fiſh.

The natives are of the largeſt ſize of Europeans. The men are tall, ſtout, well limbed, and proportioned. The talleſt ſeen was a man upon the neighbouring iſland of Huaheine, who was ſix feet three inches and an half high. The females of ſuperior rank are

in

Digitized by Google

in general above our middle ſtature, but thoſe of the inferior rank are rather below it, and ſome of them are remarkably ſmall. This difference in ſize can be accounted for no other way than from their more early commerce with men.

The complexion of the women is that of a clear olive, which in Europe is often preferred to the fineſt white and red. In thoſe who are expoſed to the inclemency of the weather it is conſiderably deepened, but in the ſuperior claſs of women, who are not thus expoſed, it continues of its primitive tint, and the ſkin is extremely ſmooth and ſoft; but they have no colour in their cheeks. The contour of the face is agreeable, and the features well proportioned, except the noſe, which is generally flat; but their eyes are very expreſſive and ſparkling, and at times melting with ſoftneſs; their teeth are regular and white, and their breath perfectly ſweet.

Their hair is generally black and coarſe: the men wear beards, in various forms, which they inceſſantly pluck part of, and keep the reſt very clean. The men as well as women eradicate the hair from under their arms, and upbraided the Engliſh for not doing the like. They move with vigour, eaſe, and even grace; their deportment is agreeable, and their behaviour, eſpecially to ſtrangers, courteous and affable. They appeared brave, candid, and open, without either ſuſpicion, cruelty, or revenge.

Digitized by Google

venge. They were, nevertheleſs, all thieves, Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander ſaw, in one of their walks, about half a dozen perſons, whoſe ſkins were of a dead white, reſembling the noſe of a white horſe, with white hair, beard, brows, and eye-laſhes; their eyes blood-ſhot, a ſhort ſight, and ſkins ſcurfy, covered with a kind of white down; but no two of theſe belonged to the ſame family, and therefore it was concluded that they were not a ſpecies, but individuals, thus anomalous from all others.

The women always cut their hair ſhort round their ears, and the men, except the fiſhermen, who are much in the water, let it flow in large locks over their ſhoulders, or tie it up in a bunch upon the top of their heads.

There is alſo a cuſtom of anointing their heads with monoe, an oil expreſſed from cocoa-nuts, wherein ſome ſweet herbs or flowers are infuſed: the oil being generally rancid, the ſmell is very diſagreeable to an European; and this being a hot country, where there is no ſuch thing as a comb, their heads of courſe are not free from lice, which the children and common people ſometimes eat; a ſhocking cuſtom, totally different from their manners in every other reſpect; for they are delicate and cleanly, and thoſe to whom the Engliſh diſtributed combs ſoon deſtroyed the vermin which had before infeſted them, with great expedition.

Another

Digitized by Google

Another cuſtom, of ſtaining their bodies, prevails, which they call tattowing. This is performed by pricking the ſkin, without fetching blood, with a ſmall inſtrument nearly in the form of a hoe; that part which correſponds with the blade is formed of a thin bone or ſhell, from a quarter of an inch to an inch and a half in width; the edge conſiſts of ſharp teeth or points, from three to twenty, according to its ſize. When they uſe it, they dip the teeth into a kind of lamp-black, formed of the ſmoke that iſſues from an oily nut (which ſerves them for candles) and water. The teeth are now placed upon the ſkin, and the handle of the inſtrument being ſtruck ſmartly, they pierce it, carrying into the punctures the black mixture, which leaves an indelible mark. This is a painful operation, and it is ſome days before the punctures heal. The youth of both ſexes undergo this operation when they are about twelve or fourteen, on various parts of the body, and in different figures, according to the whim of the parent, or probably the rank of the lad or girl. Females are uſually marked with this ſtain, in the form of a Z, on every joint of their fingers as well as toes, and often round the outſide of their feet. The men are likewiſe marked in the ſame manner, and they have both ſquares, circles, creſcents, and attempts at repreſentations of men, birds, or dogs, with other devices upon their arms and legs, which, it ſeems, were a kind of hieroglyphics that the Engliſh could not underſtand. Theſe ornaments are, however,

Digitized by Google

however, displayed with the greateſt profuſion on the breech; this, in either ſex, is covered with a deep black; above which, arches are drawn one above another, till they reach the ſhort ribs. Some are a quarter of an inch broad, and the edges are indented. They pride themſelves upon theſe arches, which are ſhewn by both ſexes with equal oſtentation and pleaſure; but whether as an ornament, or a teſtimony of their fortitude and reſolution, could not be determined. Their faces are uſually left unmarked, having ſeen but one inſtance to the contrary. There were old men who had the moſt parts of their bodies marked with large patches of black, deeply indented at the edges, ſomewhat reſembling a flame: it ſeems that they came from a low iſland called *Nooueora*, not being natives of Otaheite.

Mr. Banks was preſent at the ceremony of tattowing performed upon the poſteriors of a girl about thirteen. The inſtrument had thirty teeth, and every ſtroke, a hundred of which were at leaſt made in a minute, produced an ichor or ſerum a little tinged with blood. She endured it with moſt ſtoical reſolution for near a quarter of an hour; but the pain at length became intolerable; ſhe firſt murmured, then ſhed tears, and at laſt her lamentations were very violent; but ſhe could not influence the operator to deſiſt. She now began to ſtruggle, but was held down by two females, who ſometimes ſoothed, and at others chid her, and when ſhe was moſt refractory, beat

Digitized by Google

beat her. Mr. Banks remained an hour, and the operation was not finiſhed when he retired, though it was performed only on one ſide, the other having previouſly undergone it, and the arches upon the loins, which they conſider as the moſt ornamental, and which occaſions the moſt pain, were not yet marked.

It is extraordinary that theſe people ſhould pride themſelves upon what is no diſtinction; for they never beheld a native of this iſland, either male or female, who had attained to maturity, deficient in theſe marks: they may probably ariſe from ſuperſtition, as no viſible advantage is derived from them, and they occaſion great pain: but tho' the gentlemen made ſtrict enquiry, they could never receive any ſatisfaction upon this head.

Their apparel conſiſts of cloth or matting of various kinds, which will be hereafter deſcribed. As the cloth will not bear wetting, they wear it in dry weather, and the matting in rainy weather: they have different ways of putting them on, as their fancy ſuggeſts; for their garments are of no ſhape, nor are any two pieces ſewed together. The dreſs of women of ſuperior rank conſiſts of three or four pieces; one piece, perhaps two yards wide and eleven in length, which they wrap ſeveral times round their waiſt, and let them hang down like a petticoat to the middle of the leg, and which they call *Parou*: two or three other pieces, near two yards and an half in length,

Digitized by Google

length, and one in width, each having a hole cut in the middle, they place one upon another, and then putting their heads through the holes, the long ends fall down before and behind; the others are open at the ſides, whereby the arms are not confined: this, which is called the *Tebuta*, is gathered round the waiſt, and tied with a girdle of thinner cloth, which goes ſeveral times round them, and greatly reſembles the dreſs of the inhabitants of Peru and Chili, by the Spaniards called *Poncho*. The men's garment is the ſame, only the cloth that is wound about the hips does not hang down like a petticoat, but it is brought between their legs, ſo as to reſemble breeches in ſome degree: this is called *Maro*. All ranks of people wear this apparel, and the form being always alike, the perſons of ſuperior rank diſtinguiſh themſelves from the inferior claſs by the quantity; ſome of them will wear ſeveral pieces of cloth, eight or ten yards in length, and two or three in breadth: others wear a large piece looſely like a cloak, and thoſe of the firſt claſs deſirous to appear in ſtate, wear two pieces. The lower claſs, who have only a ſcanty allowance of cloth from the tribes or families to which they belong, are compelled to be more ſparing in their clothing. They appear almoſt naked about noon, the women wearing only a thin petticoat, and the men nothing but the faſh between their legs, which is faſtened round their waiſts. The women of the ſuperior claſs uncover themſelves as low as the waiſt in the evening, leaving off all that they

Digitized by Google

they wear on the upper part of the body, with the ſame careleſſneſs as our females lay by a cardinal. As to the chiefs, though they had as much covering round their middle as would clothe a dozen men, often the reſt of the body was quite uncovered.

They wear no covering upon their legs and feet; but they veil their faces from the ſun with ſmall bonnets, made of matting or of cocoa-nut leaves, which they manufacture themſelves in a few minutes. But their head-dreſs does not conſiſt only of this; they occaſionally wear little turbans, and ſometimes a dreſs which they eſteem far beyond it, and which is much more becoming, called *Tomou*. It conſiſts of human hair, plaited in ſmall threads. Mr. Banks brought home pieces of it near a mile in length, in which there is not a ſingle knot. Theſe are wound round the head in a large quantity, ſo as to produce a very agreeable effect. They ſtick in them flowers of different kinds, particularly the cape-jeſſamine, which grows in great plenty, and is planted near their habitations. The men ſtick the tail-feather of the tropic-bird perpendicular in their hair, which is often tied in a bunch upon the top of their heads: at times they wear a whimſical garland, compoſed of flowers of different kinds, ſtuck into a piece of the rind of a plantain; or of ſcarlet peas, fixed with gum upon a piece of wood: and they often wear a ſort of wig, conſiſting of the hair of men or dogs, or cocoa-nut ſtrings, woven together,

Digitized by Google

which they tie under their hair, ſo that theſe perukes fall down behind. They uſe but few ornaments except flowers. Both men and women wear ear-rings, but they are placed only on one ſide: they at firſt conſiſted of little pieces of ſhell, ſtone, berries, red peas, or ſome ſmáll pearls, three in a ſtring; but Engliſh beads ſoon ſupplied their place.

The children wear no ſort of cloathing, the boys till they are ſix or ſeven years old, and the girls till they are three or four.

Their houſes, or places of abode, have been already curſorily mentioned: they are all conſtructed in the wood, between the mountains and the ſea, and the ground cleared for each houſe is only ſufficient to prevent the dropping of the branches from deſtroying the thatch covering: the inhabitant ſteps immediately from his houſe under the ſhade, which is the moſt delightful that can be ſuggeſted. Groves of bread-fruit and cocoa nuts, without any underwood, are interſected in various directions, by paths that lead from different dwellings. This ſhade is very agreeable, eſpecially in ſo warm a climate, and the walks are remarkably beautiful. There being no underwood, the ſhade is cool, and the air is not impeded; moreover, the houſes having no walls, receive the gale from all points.

A par-

Digitized by Google

A particular Deſcription of a HOUSE of a middling Size, whereby, as the Structure is invariably the ſame, a proper Idea may be formed of the large as well as ſmall.

IT is raiſed upon an oblong ſquare, four and twenty feet in length, and eleven in width, over which a roof is raiſed, upon three rows of poſts or pillars, parallel to each other, one on each ſide, and the other in the center. The roof conſiſts of two flat ſides inclining to one another, and terminating in a ridge, like the roofs of our thatched houſes. The greateſt height within is near nine feet, and the eaves on each ſide come to within about three feet and an half of the ground: beneath this, and through the whole height of the extremities, it is open, no part of it being immured. A thatch of palm-leaves compoſes the roof, and the floor is ſtrewed with hay; over which are mats, the whole compoſing one cuſhion, upon which they repoſe in the day, and reſt at night. In ſome dwellings there is a ſingle ſtool, which is ſolely appropriated to the maſter of the family. Their furniture conſiſts of a few little blocks of wood, the upper ſides of which are formed into curves, and which they uſe as pillows.

A houſe is chiefly uſed as a place for ſleeping; as, unleſs it rains, they eat under the ſhade of a tree. The apparel that they wear in the day becomes their covering in the

Digitized by Google

night, when the floor is the general bed of all the inmates, no partition dividing it. The hoſt and his wife ſleep in the middle; next to theſe the married people; to them ſucceed the unmarried women, and at a ſmall diſtance the unmarried men; the ſervants paſs the night in the open air, unleſs it rains, when they are admitted juſt within the ſhed.

Houſes of a different conſtruction, belonging to the chiefs, which are not ſo public, are alſo to be met with. Theſe are far ſmaller, and ſo built as to be carried from place to place in canoes, and erected like a tent, as occaſion requires. The ſides are incloſed with cocoa-nut leaves, but the air gains admiſſion; and the chief and his wife only reſt in them.

Other houſes of much larger dimenſions, not conſtructed either for the uſe of any one chief, or a ſingle family, are alſo to be found, but as general receptacles for the people of a whole diſtrict. There are among them ſome two hundred feet long, thirty broad, and, under the ridge, twenty feet high; theſe houſes are conſtructed and ſupported at the general expence of the diſtrict, as they are deſigned for their common accommodation; and on one ſide there is a large area, having low paliſadoes for its incloſure.

They have no walls. Indeed privacy is little neceſſary among people who do not entertain the leaſt idea of decency, and whoſe appetites and

Digitized by Google

and paſſions are without conſtraint gratified before witneſſes and ſtrangers. And from this conſideration it is, that in their converſation, that which conſtitutes the chief gratification of their pleaſure, is always the principal ſubject; and that every thing is mentioned without any reſtraint or emotion, and in the moſt explicit terms, by both men and women.

The food eaten is chiefly vegetable. There are no tame animals except hogs, dogs, and poultry, and theſe not in plenty. A hog being killed by a chief, it is almoſt equally divided among the inferiors, who being very numerous, their ſhares, which are not often diſtributed, cannot be very large. But they more frequently obtain dogs and fowls. The flavour of their fowls is not very agreeable; but it was generally agreed, that a South Sea dog was not much inferior to an Engliſh lamb. Their excellence probably ariſes from their being kept up, and eating nothing but vegetables. The ſea produces a great variety of fiſh. The ſmaller ſort are uſually eaten raw, in the manner we eat oyſters; and they are very fond of every kind of fiſh, particularly lobſters and crabs. Indeed they will eat not only ſea-inſects, but what are called blubbers, though ſo tough, that they muſt be in a ſtate of putrefaction before they can be ſwallowed. Amongſt the vegetables which have been mentioned for food, the chief is the bread-fruit, which they obtain by climbing a tree: the tree, it is true, does not grow ſpontaneouſly;

Digitized by Google

but if ten of them are planted in a man's life-time, which may be done in about an hour, he will acquit himself to posterity equally with an Englishman who ploughs the intemperate part of winter, and alternately reaps in the summer's heat.

The bread-fruit is not indeed always in season; but cocoa-nuts, bananas, plantains, and a great variety of other fruits, supply its place.

Cookery cannot be much studied here as an art; and indeed the natives have but two ways of dressing their food, which are, broiling and baking: broiling is so simple, that it requires no description, and their baking has been already set forth, in the relation of Tupia's entertainment. Large fish and hogs are very well dressed in this manner, and were more juicy and better done than by the arts of European cookery. Bread-fruit is also dressed in an oven, which makes it soft, and something like potatoes, when boiled, though not so farinaceous.

Three dishes are produced by the bread-fruit, with the assistance of the water or the milk of the cocoa-nut, when it is made into a paste with a stone pestle, and afterwards blended with ripe plantains, bananas, or the paste called *Mahie*.

This mahie, which is a succedaneum for ripe bread-fruit, before the season for a fresh crop

Digitized by Google

crop comes on, is made in the following manner.

The bread-fruit is gathered before it is quite ripe, and being placed in heaps, is covered with leaves; when it undergoes a fermentation, and becomes naufeouſly ſweet: the core is then extracted entire, by pulling the ſtalk, and the remainder is caſt into a hole, uſually in the houſes, lined at the bottom and ſides with graſs: it is then covered with leaves and heavy ſtones: it now undergoes another fermentation, and becomes ſour, when it will not change for ſeveral months. It is taken out of the holes occaſionally, and being ſhaped into balls, it is put in leaves and baked, when it will keep ſeveral weeks. The natives eat it both cold and hot, and ſeldom have a meal without it, though to the taſte of Europeans it is as diſagreeable as pickled olives uſually are when eaten the firſt time,

The preparation of this mahie conſiſts chiefly in fermentation, and therefore it often fails, without their being capable of aſſigning a reaſon; whence ariſe many ſuperſtitious ceremonies and notions. The old women are uſually employed in this operation, who will not permit any one to touch the leaſt thing appertaining to it but their own aſſiſtants, nor even to enter the place where the operation is made. Mr. Banks was pronounced guilty of ſpoiling a great quantity, by inadvertently touching a ſingle leaf. The gentlewoman who conducted

Digitized by Google

conducted the affair assured him, that the process would not succeed, and directly uncovered the hole in wrath. Mr. Banks expressed his chagrin at the harm he had occasioned, but was in a great degree consoled by the opportunity which he hereby obtained of viewing the preparation, which probably he would never otherwise have had.

This is their principal food, and salt-water the sauce, there being no meal without it; those who reside near the sea fetch it as it is wanted; those who live at a greater distance keep it in large bamboos. Besides salt-water, they have another sauce, of the kernels of cocoa-nuts, which when fermented, dissolve into a paste that resembles butter, and is beaten up with salt-water. Its flavour is strong and nauseous; by use, however, the English became reconciled to it so far, that they preferred it to any other sauce, particularly with fish. It was considered by the natives as a dainty, and therefore it is not used in common.

Their general drink is only water, or the juice of the cocoa-nut; liquors that intoxicate, by fermentation, being fortunately unknown to them; narcotics, likewise, they have none. A few drank freely of the captain's liquors, and were intoxicated; but the first debauch completely satisfied them. They nevertheless inebriate themselves with a juice extracted from the leaves of a plant called *Ava Ava*. It was not, however, in season at the time they were there, and

Digitized by Google

and therefore ſaw no inſtances of its effects; and conſidering drunkenneſs as a ſhame, they would probably have concealed from the Engliſh this weakneſs, or rather vice, which is almoſt peculiar to the ſuperior claſs, who pique themſelves upon drinking the greateſt quantity. This intoxicating juice their women are never ſuffered to uſe.

They have no tables; but their manner of eating is very neat, though the articles admit of no ſhow; and they commonly eat without company; however, when a ſtranger viſits them, he uſually is their gueſt. The following is a deſcription of a meal of their chiefs.

Being ſeated under the ſhade of a tree, or on the ſhady part of his houſe, and a great quantity of leaves, either of the bread-fruit or banana, being neatly ſpread as a table-cloth, a baſket is then ſet by him with his proviſions, which, if fiſh or fleſh, are ready dreſſed, and contained in leaves, and a couple of cocoa-nut ſhells, with ſalt and freſh water: his ſervants ſeat themſelves by him, and he then begins by waſhing his hands and his mouth with the freſh water, which he repeats ſeveral times throughout the whole repaſt; afterwards he takes part of his proviſion from the baſket, which uſually conſiſts of ſmall fiſh, ſome bread-fruits, ripe bananas, or apples: having taken half a bread-fruit, he peels off the rind, and extracts the core with his nails, with which he crams his mouth, and whilſt chewing

Digitized by Google

ing it, takes the fish out, and breaks some of them in the salt water, putting the remainder upon the leaves before him. After this, he takes up a small piece of the broken fish, and sucks it, in order to get as much of the salt water as he can: in the same manner he uses the rest, by morsels, and frequently takes a sup of the salt water, at one time out of the nut-shell, at others out of the palm of his hand: in the interim one of his attendants prepares a young cocoa-nut, peeling the outer rind with his teeth, which depends greatly upon slight: and yet many of the crew were able to do it before they departed. After the chief has eat his fruit, &c. he takes the plantains, one of which he swallows at a mouthful, though as big as a black-pudding: if in lieu of plantains there are apples, he always pares them with a shell; with which he then begins to cut off the rind, but with so little address, that much of the fruit is lost. When he has flesh, he divides it with a piece of bamboo, and splits it with his nail. In the mean time, some of his attendants are employed in beating bread-fruit with a stone pestle on a wooden block; after which it is sprinkled with water, and reduced to the consistence of soft paste, when it is put into a vessel resembling a butcher's tray, and occasionally mixed with banana or mahie, or eat alone. The operation of mixing makes it acquire the appearance of a thick custard, and he sips a large cocoa-nut shell full of it. The meal being then

Digitized by Google

then finiſhed by again waſhing his mouth and hands. Then the cocoa-nut ſhells are cleaned, and all the fragments are put in the baſket.

Theſe people eat at one meal amazing quantities. One man will devour three fiſhes as large as a perch; the ſame number of bread-fruits, bigger than two fiſts; perhaps fifteen plantains or bananas, each ſix or ſeven inches long, and four or five round; and not leſs than a quart of the pounded bread-fruit, in ſubſtance like the thickeſt unbaked cuſtard.

Theſe people, who are remarkably fond of company, and particularly that of females, nevertheleſs, exclude its pleaſures from the table. A repaſt here, which in all other countries unites friends and families, ſeparates them. This could never be accounted for; the only reaſon they gave was, *becauſe it was right*; but why it was right to eat alone, they never endeavoured to explain. The force of habit was however ſo great, that they expreſſed the greateſt diſlike, and even diſpleaſure, at our eating in ſociety, eſpecially with women, and out of the ſame diſhes. It was at one time imagined this uncommon ſingularity aroſe from a ſuperſtitious opinion: but they invariably affirmed the contrary. It was likewiſe obſerved, there were ſome caprices in the cuſtom, for which the Engliſh could as little account as for the cauſe. The women could never be induced to partake of the proviſions at the captain's table in company; nevertheleſs they would go into

Digitized by Google

the ſervant's apartments, and eat heartily; nor were they diſconcerted if the gentlemen came in at the time. By accident a woman has eaten in their company; but then ſhe has expreſſed the greateſt concern leſt it ſhould be known, and always requeſted it ſhould remain a ſecret.

Brothers and ſiſters have their ſeparate baſkets, with proviſion and its accompaniments. Upon their firſt viſit at the tents, every one brought a baſket; and upon ſitting down to table, they departed to ſit down upon the ground, at ſome yards diſtance from each other, and turning their faces oppoſite ways, took their meal without the leaſt converſation.

The females not only refrain from eating with the male ſex, and of the ſame diſhes, but even have their victuals ſeparately cooked by boys, who depoſit it in a different ſhed, and attend them during their repaſt.

They have, nevertheleſs, frequently intreated the gentlemen to eat with them, when upon a viſit at their houſes; and have eaten out of the ſame baſket, and drunk out of the ſame veſſel. The women advanced in years, however, always ſeemed to be diſpleaſed at this liberty; and if the gentlemen chanced to touch their victuals, or the baſket that contained it, would deſtroy it.

In the heat of the day, after dinner, the people of a middle age, of the ſuperior claſs, uſually

Digitized by Google

uſually ſleep: they are indeed uncommonly indolent, and ſleeping and eating form almoſt all their occupations. The older people are not ſo drowſy, and the boys and girls are kept awake by the ſprightlineſs and activity of their time of life.

Capt. Cook has occaſionally mentioned their paſtimes, and particularly muſic, dancing, wreſtling, and ſhooting with the bow; they likewiſe ſometimes exert themſelves in throwing the lance at a mark: this weapon is near nine feet long, the mark is the bole of a plantain, placed at about twenty yards diſtance.

The muſical inſtruments are drums and flutes; the flutes are formed out of a hollow bamboo about a foot in length, and have only two ſtops, and therefore but four notes, out of which they ſeem to have formed but one tune. They apply the fore-finger of the left hand, and the middle finger of the right hand, to theſe ſtops.

The drum conſiſts of a hollow block of wood, of a cylindrical form, at one end ſolid, and at the other end covered with ſhark's ſkin: theſe they beat with their hands; and they can tune two drums of different notes into concord. They can likewiſe bring flutes into uniſon, by rolling up a leaf, like our ſliding tubes for teleſcopes, which they move up or down till the effect is produced, which they determine by their ear.

Digitized by Google

They ſing to theſe inſtruments; and their ſongs are frequently extempore: every two verſes is a ſong, or pehay; they are moſt frequently in rhime, and metre. Mr. Banks tranſcribed ſome of them that were compoſed upon his arrival, as nearly as he could expreſs their ſounds by our letters; but when they were read, for want of their accent, ſcarcely either metre or rhime could be produced. The following ſpecimen may probably pleaſe the curious reader.

Tede pahai de parow-a
Ha maru no mina.

E pahah Tayo malama tai ya
No Tabane tonatou whannomi ya.

E Turai eattu terara patee whennua toai
Ino o maio Pretane to whennuaia no Tute.

A tranſlation can ſcarcely be attempted in Engliſh. They alſo amuſe themſelves in ſinging couplets ſimilar to theſe when alone, or in their families, particularly in the evening; for though they require no fires, they burn a kind of candles: theſe candles conſiſt of the kernels of a nut, which they put one over another upon a ſkewer, that is thruſt through the middle; the upper one, when lighted, burns as low as the ſecond, and conſumes that part of the ſkewer which paſſes through it; the ſecond taking fire, burns in the like manner to the third, till the whole is conſumed. Theſe candles

Digitized by Google

candles will burn a long time, and afford a tolerable light. They ſeldom remain up above an hour after ſunſet; but when they have viſitors they uſually keep a light burning all night, probably as a check upon ſuch females as they wiſh to remain immaculate.

The unmarried females, are, in other countries, ſuppoſed to be totally ignorant of what others upon ſome occaſions may appear to be acquainted with; and their conduct and converſation are confined within narrower limits, and never glance at whatever relates to a connection with the male ſex: but here it is reverſed. A dance, called *Timorodee*, is cuſtomary, and it is performed by about ten young girls. It is compoſed of motions moſt extravagantly wanton, to which they are trained up from their infancy; and theſe movements are accompanied by expreſſions which convey the ſame ideas. They nevertheleſs keep time with ſurprizing exactneſs. The privileges of the virgin, upon this occaſion, are not allowed to the woman, from the inſtant that ſhe has practiſed theſe amorous leſſons, and realized the intimations of the amuſement.

Chaſtity is certainly not held in high eſtimation. As a proof of this, a great number of the chief people of Otaheite, of both ſexes, have formed a ſociety, in which every man may promiſcuouſly chuſe a female, thereby ſecuring a conſtant variety as often as deſires excite,

Digitized by Google

cite, which is so often, that the same man and woman seldom cohabit together a week.

Arreoy is the name given to these associations; and the members admit of no strangers at their meetings. The men here amuse themselves by wrestling, and the women dance the timorodee with its most amorous gesticulations, to excite desires which are frequently gratified in the moment. But the sequel is still more shocking. When any of the women chance to be pregnant, which indeed does not occur so often as if they were to cohabit only with one man, the unhappy infant is smothered the instant of its birth, to prevent its being an incumbrance to the parents, and interrupt the mother in the gratification of her lascivious desires. However, it frequently happens, that the passion which excites a woman to engage in this society, subsides when she becomes a mother, by that natural affection which has been given to all creatures for the preservation of their offspring. Nevertheless, she is not allowed to spare the life of her child, except she can find a man who will agree to maintain it; in this case the murder is prevented; but they are both considered by this act to have retreated from the association, and have no farther claim to the privileges of arreoy; the woman from that time being called *Whannowwow*, "Bearer of children," which in other countries is held in the highest estimation, but is here a term of reproach.

Such

Digitized by Google

Such a practice may be doubted; but they are so far from concealing it, that they considered it as an honour; and the gentlemen have received this account from their own mouths. Some acknowledged, that they had for a considerable time belonged to this extraordinary society, that they belonged to it at that time, and that many of their offspring had been sacrificed.

It would, however, be unjust to close this account without mentioning their personal cleanliness, which surely is a virtue which preserves both beauty and health, and adds delight to our most admired pleasures. The Otaheiteans, as well men as women, constantly bathe in running water three times each day; once when they rise in the morning, at noon, and before they go to sleep. It has been already observed, that they rinse not only the mouth, but wash their hands at their meals very frequently; and their clothes are kept very clean; whence it is, that in a large company, no inconvenience arises but heat, a compliment that cannot be paid to many of the polite assemblies in the world.

Their chief manufacture is their cloth, in the fabrication of which there are some particulars which may afford instruction even to the artificers of our island, and the editor will therefore be more minute in the description.

Digitized by Google

They have three kinds of cloth, consisting of the bark of three different trees, the Chinese paper mulberry, the bread-fruit tree, and a tree that is like the West Indian wild fig-tree.

The most superior sort for whiteness and fineness, is made of the paper mulberry, called aouta; this is worn by people of rank, and dyes a remarkable good red. The second sort is made of the bread-fruit tree, named ooroo, and worn by the inferior class; the third is made of the tree which resembles the fig; it is coarse, and of the colour of the darkest brown paper: this, though not so agreeable to view or feel, is the most valuable, as water will not penetrate it, a quality which the others are deficient in. This is the most scarce, as well as the most useful; it is perfumed, and worn as a morning dress by the superior kind of people.

These trees are all cultivated with great care, particularly the mulberry, which grows in the greatest part of the cultivated land, but it is not fit for use after two or three years growth, when it is near eight feet high, and rather thicker than a man's thumb: it is in most esteem when thin, tall, and without branches; wherefore the lower leaves are plucked off, with their germs, as often as they are likely of branching.

Notwithstanding the cloths made of these trees are different, they are all manufactured in the like manner: the process, therefore, in the

Digitized by Google

the fine ſort, that is made of the mulberry, will be ſufficient to gratify the reader's curioſity. The trees being of a proper ſize, are drawn up, and ſtripped of their branches; then the roots and tops are cut off; the bark being then ſlit up, is drawn off, and when a proper quantity has been collected, it is carried down to ſome running water, where it is ſoaked, and ſecured from floating by heavy ſtones. When it is ſufficiently ſoftened, the female ſervants go to the brook, and ſtripping themſelves, ſeat themſelves in the water, to ſeparate the inner bark from the external green part: to effect this, they place the under part upon a flat ſmooth board, and with the ſhell called tyger's tongue, (or tellina gargadia) ſcrape it thin, dipping it often in the water, till there are no remains but the fibres of the inner part. After this preparation, they are ſpread out upon plantain leaves; when the miſtreſs of the family conſtantly ſuperintends the operation: they are placed about eleven or twelve yards, one by the ſide of another, till they extend near a foot broad, and two or three layers are laid one upon the other; attention is paid that the cloth ſhall be of an equal thickneſs, and if the bark chances to be thinner in any particular part of one layer than the other, a thicker piece is laid over it in the next. It continues in this ſtate till the morning, when great part of the water is drained off or evaporated, and the fibres now adhere together, and form one piece.

Digitized by Google

Then it is removed, and laid upon a ſmooth piece of wood, properly prepared, and then beaten by the women ſervants with wooden inſtruments, near a foot long, and three inches in thickneſs, and called *Etoa*. This inſtrument ſomewhat reſembles a ſquare razor-ſtrap, except that the handle is longer, and each of its four ſides is marked lengthways, with ſmall grooves, or furrows, of various degrees of fineneſs, thoſe on one ſide being of a width and depth that will receive a ſmall packthread, and the others gradually finer, till they become as ſmall as fine thread.

It is at firſt beat with the coarſeſt ſide of the mallet, when they keep time like our ſmiths; it quickly ſpreads under the ſtrokes, principally in the breadth, and the grooves give it the appearance of threads; being ſucceſſively beaten with the other ſides, the fineſt is the laſt, when it becomes fit for uſe. It is ſometimes, however, made ſtill thinner, by its being beat with the fineſt ſide of the mallet, after being ſeveral times doubled: it is now called *Hotoa*, and is nearly as thin as muſlin: it is very white when bleached, and becomes ſtill whiter and finer by being waſhed and again beaten after it has been made into apparel.

There are kinds of this cloth of different degrees of fineneſs, in proportion to the attention paid in the manufacturing it, without being doubled. The other cloth likewiſe differs in

Digitized by Google

in proportion as it is beaten; but they vary from each other in consequence of the different materials of which they are composed. The bark of the bread-fruit is considerably longer and thicker at the time of this operation than that of the fig; the process afterwards is entirely similar.

When it is to be washed after having been worn, it is carried to the brook, and put in to soak, being, as at first, preserved from floating by a stone; it is then squeezed, and many pieces of it are laid one upon another, and beat with the coarsest side of the mallet, when it becomes equal in thickness to broad cloth, but softer and more agreeable to the touch, after it has been a little while in use, though at first it feels as if it had been starched. It sometimes breaks in the beating, but it is easily pasted on a patch with a gluten prepared from the root of the pea, which can scarcely be perceived. The females likewise employ themselves in rectifying blemishes of all sorts, like our women with respect to needle-work. When their work is designed to be very fine, they paste an entire covering of hoboo over it. The chief excellencies of this cloth are its coolness and softness; and its imperfections, that it will not keep out water, and is easily torn.

They dye this cloth chiefly yellow and red. The red is very beautiful, and perhaps a brighter and more delicate colour cannot be met with in Europe; our full scarlet comes nearest

Digitized by Google

nearest it, and the best imitation which Mr. Banks's painter could produce was with a mixture of vermilion and carmine. The yellow is also bright, but we have many better.

The red is made with the mixture of two vegetable juices, neither of which separately has the least tendency to that colour. One is a kind of fig, called *Matte*, and the other the Cordia Sebestina, or Etou; the fruit of the fig is used, and the leaves of the cordia.

The fruit of the fig is about as large as a very small gooseberry; and each of them, upon breaking off the stalk close, produces a drop of a milky liquor, like the juice of our figs, of which indeed the tree is a species. This liquor is collected into a small quantity of cocoa-nut water: to prepare a gill of which will require near four quarts of these little figs. A sufficient quantity being prepared, the leaves of the etou are wetted in it, and then laid upon a plantain leaf, when they are turned about till they gradually become flaccid; then they are squeezed, and the pressure increased, but so as not to break them: as the flaccidity augments, they become spungy, when they are supplied with more of the liquor: in a few minutes the colour begins to appear upon the veins of the leaves, and they are soon saturated with it: they are then squeezed, with as much strength as can be applied, and the liquor strained whilst it is expressed.

To

Digitized by Google

To this end the boys prepare a quantity of the moo, by drawing it between their teeth, or little ſticks, till it is extracted from the green bark and the branny ſubſtance which lies beneath it, and only a thin web of the fibres remains, in which the leaves of the etou are put, and thro' this the juice which they contain is ſtrained as it is expelled. The leaves being ſucculent, little more juice is preſſed out of them than they have imbibed: after they have been emptied, they are filled again, and then preſſed till the quality which tinctures the liquor that paſſes through them is exhauſted, when they are thrown away; but the moo, being greatly ſtained with the colour, is kept as a bruſh to lay the dye upon the cloth.

The liquor forced out is conſtantly received into ſmall cups of the plantain leaf; but whether it has any quality favourable to the colour, or from the facility with which it is procured, could not be determined.

They ſeldom dye more than the edges of the thin cloth, but the thick ſort is coloured through the whole ſurface: the liquor may be ſaid to be uſed rather as a pigment than a dye, a coat being laid upon one ſide only, with the fibres of the moo; and though the thin cloth ſometimes appears to have been ſoaked in the liquor, the colour has not the ſame luſtre and richneſs, as when it has been applied according to the other method.

The

Digitized by Google

The leaf of the etou is generally uſed in this proceſs, and produces the fineſt colour; nevertheleſs the juice of the figs will afford a red by mixing it with the ſpecies of tournefortia, called taheinoo, the pohuc, the eurhe, or convolvulus Braſilienſis, and a kind of ſolanum named ebooa: from the uſe of theſe plants, or from various proportions of the materials, many varieties are diſcernible in the colours of their cloth, ſeveral of which are far ſuperior to the reſt.

But the beſt is not permanent; though it is probable that a method might be diſcovered to fix it, if proper experiments were tried, to ſearch for latent qualities, which might be produced by blending different vegetable juices, and might not be an unprofitable employment; as we are convinced from the mere inſpection of indico, woad, dyer's weed, and moſt of the leaves that are uſed for the like intent, the colours which they yield could never be imagined. With regard to this red of Otaheite, we ſhall only add, that the females who have been engaged in preparing it, preſerve with attention the colour upon their nails, and fingers, which they conſider as ornamental and beautiful.

The yellow colour is made of the bark of the morinda citrifolia, called nono, by infuſing it in water after it is ſcraped; when ſtanding ſome time, it is ſtrained and uſed as a dye. The morinda ſeems to be a good ſubject for inveſtigation

Digitized by Google

inveſtigation, with regard to dyeing. In Brown's hiſtory of Jamaica we find three ſpecies of it mentioned, which he tells us are uſed to dye brown; and Rumphius ſays with regard to the bancula auguſtifolia, which reſembles our nono, that it is uſed in the Eaſt Indian iſlands as a fixing drug for red colours with great ſucceſs.

The natives likewiſe dye yellow with the fruit of the tamanu; but how the colour is extracted could not be diſcovered. They have alſo a preparation that dyes black and brown; but theſe colours are very indifferent.

Here is alſo a conſiderable manufacture of matting of different kinds, ſome of which is ſuperior to any in Europe: they ſleep upon the coarſer ſort, and the finer they wear in bad weather. Much pains are taken with that made of the bark of the poerou, the hibiſcus tiliaceus of Linnæus, which is nearly as fine as a coarſe cloth. Another ſort, called vanne, is ſtill more beautiful: it is gloſſy, white, and ſhining, and is made of the leaves of the wharrou, a ſpecies of the pandanus; but the gentlemen had no opportunity of obſerving either the flowers or fruit. Other matts, or moeas, are uſed, to ſit or ſleep upon, which are made of ruſhes and graſs; it is plaited with great diſpatch and facility.

They are likewiſe very expert in making baſket and wicker work: their baſkets are of

Digitized by Google

various patterns, ſome very neat; and both men and women of all ranks make them: they alſo manufacture baſkets and panniers of the cocoa-nut leaf in a very ſhort time; and the women who viſited us early in a morning ſent, as ſoon as the ſun was high, for a few of the leaves, of which they made ſmall bonnets, in ſo ſhort a time, and with ſo little trouble, that, when the ſun went down in the evening, they threw them away. They did not cover the head, but conſiſted only of a band that encircled it, and a ſhade that projected over the eyes.

They make ropes and lines of the bark of the poerou, from an inch thick to the ſmallneſs of a thin packthread: of theſe they make fiſhing-nets; and of the fibres of the cocoa-nut they make thread, for faſtening the different parts of their canoes, and belts, either round or flat, plaited or twiſted; and of the bark of the erowa, a nettle that grows on the mountains, and is ſcarce, they make excellent fiſhing-lines: with theſe they catch the ſtrongeſt fiſh, ſuch as bonetas and albicores, which would ſnap our ſtrongeſt ſilk lines.

They make a kind of net of a coarſe broad graſs, the blades of which reſemble flags: theſe they tie together in a looſe manner, till the net is perhaps eighty fathom long; which they haul in ſhoal ſmooth water, and its own weight keeps it ſo cloſe to the ground, that a ſingle fiſh ſeldom eſcapes.

In

In all things relative to fiſhing they are very ingenious; they make harpoons of cane, and point them with hard wood, which in their hands ſtrike fiſh more forcibly than thoſe headed with iron will do in ours, notwithſtanding the advantage of ours being faſtened to a line, whereby the fiſh is ſecured, if the hook does not mortally wound him.

They have two ſorts of fiſh-hooks, well adapted in their conſtruction to the purpoſe they are intended for. One of theſe is called wittee wittee, and is uſed for towing. The ſhank is made of mother of pearl, and the moſt gloſſy that can be obtained; the inſide, which is the brighteſt, is placed behind. Theſe hooks have a tuft of white dog's or hog's hair fixed to them, ſo as to reſemble the tail of a fiſh; theſe implements, therefore, ſerve for hook as well as bait, and are uſed with a rod of bamboo and a line of erowa. To ſecure ſucceſs, the fiſher watches the flight of the birds which conſtantly accompany the bonetas as they ſwim in ſhoals, whereby he directs his canoe, and having the advantage of theſe guides, he ſeldom returns unſucceſsful.

The other ſort of hook is likewiſe made of mother of pearl, or ſome ſuch hard ſhell: they cannot beard them like our hooks; but to produce the ſame effect, the point turns inwards. They are of all ſizes, and ſerve to catch different kinds of fiſh. They are conſtructed upon a very ſimple principle, and every fiſher-

Digitized by Google

man is his own manufacturer; the ſhell being cut into ſquare pieces with another ſhell, and wrought into a form correſponding with the hook, by pieces of coral, which are rough enough to ſerve as a file; a hole being now bored in the middle, the drill being the firſt ſtone that is met with which has a ſharp corner; this is fixed to the end of a piece of bamboo, and turned between the hands like a chocolate mill; when the ſhell is pierced, and the hole wide enough, a ſmall file of coral is inſerted, by the application of which the hook is ſoon accompliſhed.

The reader has doubtleſs already formed ſome opinion of their maſonry, carving, and architecture, from the account that has been related of the morais, or ſepulchres. The other moſt remarkable article of building and carving is their canoes: and probably to conſtruct one of their principal boats with their tools, is as elaborate a work, as to build a Britiſh man of war with European utenſils.

They have a ſtone adze; a chiſſel, or gouge, made of bone, generally that of a man's arm between the elbow and the wriſt; a raſp of coral; and the ſkin of a ſting-ray, with coral ſand, by way of poliſher or file.

Here is a full liſt of their tools, and with theſe they erect houſes, build canoes, hew ſtone, and fell, cleave, carve, and poliſh wood.

The

Digitized by Google

The blade of their adzes is made of a kind of baſaltes, of a blackiſh or grey colour, not hard, but very tough: they are of different ſizes; ſome, that are deſigned for felling, weigh from ſix to eight pounds; others, that are intended for carving, not above as many ounces; but it is neceſſary to ſharpen them almoſt inceſſantly; to which end a ſtone and a cocoa-nut ſhell full of water are always ready.

Felling a tree, (in which theſe tools are of little utility) is conſidered as an important operation: this requires many hands, and the conſtant labour of many days. When it is down, they ſplit it, with the grain, into planks about three or four inches thick, the whole length and breadth of the tree, many of which are eight feet in circumference, and forty to the branches, and about the ſame thickneſs throughout. The tree in moſt frequent uſe is in their language called avio, the ſtem of which is tall and ſtrait: ſome of the ſmaller boats are indeed made of the bread-fruit tree, which is a light ſpungy wood, and wrought without difficulty. The plank is ſmoothed very dexterouſly and expeditiouſly with their adzes, and they can take off a thin coat from a plank without miſſing a ſtroke. Being, however, deſtitute of the art of warping a plank, every part of the canoe is ſhaped by the hand.

The boats uſed by the inhabitants of this and the circumjacent iſlands may be divided into two claſſes, ivahahs, and pahies.

Digitized by Google

The firſt is uſed for ſhort voyages, and is wall-ſided and flat-bottomed; the pahie for longer excurſions, and is ſharp-bottomed and bow-ſided. The ivahahs are all of the ſame figure, but of different ſizes, and uſed for various purpoſes: they are in length from ſeventy-two feet to ten, but the breadth is not proportionate; for thoſe of ten feet are near a foot wide, and thoſe of above ſeventy are ſcarcely two. They have the fighting ivahah, the fiſhing ivahah, and the travelling ivahah; ſome of the latter going from one iſland to another. The fighting ivahah is by much the longeſt, and the head and ſtern are raiſed conſiderably above the body, in a ſemicircular form; and in particular the ſtern, which is ſometimes ſeventeen or eighteen feet high, though the boat itſelf is not three. Theſe never go to ſea ſingle, but are faſtened together, ſide by ſide, at the diſtance of near three feet, by poles of wood, that are laid acroſs and laſhed to the gunwales. Upon the fore-part is a ſtage or platform, about ten or twelve feet long, and ſomewhat wider than the boats, which is ſupported by pillars about ſix feet high: upon this ſtage appear the fighting men, whoſe weapons are ſlings and ſpears; for their bows and arrows are uſed only for amuſement. Beneath theſe ſtages ſit the rowers, who receive the wounded, and provide freſh men in their ſtead. Some have a platform of bamboos through their whole length, and much broader, and by this means they will carry a great number

Digitized by Google

number of men; but only one was ſeen thus equipped.

The fiſhing ivahahs are of various ſizes, from forty feet to ten; thoſe that are upwards of twenty-five feet carry ſail occaſionally. The travelling ivahah is always double, and has a ſmall neat houſe, about five or ſix feet broad, and ſix or ſeven feet in length, which is faſtened upon the fore-part for the accommodation of the chief people, in which they ſit in the day-time, and at night ſleep in them. The fiſhing ivahahs are frequently joined together, and have a houſe on board.

The pahie is likewiſe of various ſizes, from thirty feet to ſixty; but is very narrow, like the ivahah: one that Captain Cook meaſured was fifty-one feet long, and but one foot and a half wide at the top. In the wideſt part it was near three feet; and this is the general proportion. It does not widen gradually; but the ſides being ſtrait, and parallel, a little way below the gunwale, it abruptly ſwells, and comes to a ridge at the bottom. Theſe are alſo uſed for fighting, but chiefly for long voyages. The largeſt is the fighting pahie, which is fitted with the ſtage or platform, and is proportionably larger than thoſe of the ivahah, their form enabling them to ſuſtain a much greater weight. Thoſe uſed for ſailing are frequently double; and the middle-ſize are thought to be the beſt ſea-boats. They are often out a month together, cruiſing from iſland to iſland; and

Digitized by Google

and ſometimes a fortnight or twenty days at ſea, and could remain longer, if they could carry more freſh water and proviſions.

When they carry ſail ſingle, they uſe a log of wood, faſtened to the end of two poles which lie croſs the veſſel, and project from ſix to ten feet beyond its ſide, which reſembles what is uſed by the flying proa of the Ladrone Iſlands, and is called an out-rigger. The ſhrouds are faſtened to this out-rigger, and it is very neceſſary in trimming the boat in a high wind.

They have ſome one maſt, and ſome two, which conſiſt of a ſingle ſtick, and when the canoe is thirty feet in length, that of the maſt is not five and twenty: it is fixed to a frame above the canoe, and has a ſail of matting near one third longer than itſelf: the ſail is pointed at the top, ſquare at bottom, and curved in the ſide; reſembling what is called a ſhoulder of mutton ſail in men of war's boats: it is fixed in a frame of wood, which ſurrounds it; and is deſtitute of any means of reefing or furling; wherefore when either becomes neceſſary, it muſt be cut away, which, however, ſeldom happens. At the top of the maſt are ornaments of feathers.

The oars or paddles have a long handle and a flat blade, and ſomewhat reſemble bakers peels. Every perſon in the boat has one, except thoſe under the awning; and they get

Digitized by Google

forward with them very expeditiouſly. So much water enters at the ſeams, that one perſon, if not more, is continually employed in throwing it out. They excel in landing, and in a ſurf putting off from the ſhore: by their great length and high ſterns they land dry, when the Endeavour's boats could ſcarcely land at any rate: and they have the like advantages in putting off, from the height of the head.

The only boats that are uſed by the natives of Otaheite are the ivahahs; but ſeveral pahies were ſeen that came from different iſlands.

Theſe pahies are carefully preſerved in a ſort of houſes built on purpoſe; they are formed of poles fixed upright in the ground, the tops of which are drawn towards each other, and faſtened with a ſtrong cord, ſo as to form ſomewhat of a Gothic arch, which is thatched quite to the ground, being open only at the extremities; and are ſometimes fifty or ſixty paces in length

They have rules for foretelling the weather, and the quarter the wind will blow from, in which they are frequently ſucceſsful.

They ſteer by the ſun in the day, and by the ſtars in the night. They diſtinguiſh the ſtars by names, and know in what part they will appear in any of the months during which they are viſible; they alſo know the time of their annual

Digitized by Google

annual appearing and disappearing with more precision than could be imagined.

It was difficult to discover their method of dividing time; but it was observed, that in speaking of it, either past or to come, they always used the term *Malama*, which signifies moon. They reckon thirteen of these moons, and then begin again; which proves that they have an idea of the solar year: but how they suppute their months, in such a manner that thirteen of them shall be equal with the year, could not be discovered; for they reckon each month has twenty-nine days, including one in which the moon is invisible. They have different names for them, and have frequently mentioned the fruits that would be in season, and the weather that would succeed, in each of them: they have also a name for them collectively, though they use it only in speaking of their religious mysteries.

The day is divided into twelve parts, of two hours each; six belong to the day, and six to the night. They guess pretty nearly at these divisions by the height of the sun while he is above the horizon; but the stars afford them but little guide in this respect.

In numeration they go from one to ten, the number of fingers on both hands; and though they have a different name for each number, they usually take hold of their fingers separately, shifting from one hand to the other, till they

Digitized by Google

they attain the number they intend to expreſs. It was alſo obſerved, that when they were converſing together, they united ſigns with their words, which were ſo expreſſive that a ſtranger might eaſily comprehend them.

They are much more deficient in menſuration than in computing numbers, having but one term which correſponds with fathom: when they talk of diſtances from one place to another, they expreſs it, like the Aſiatics, by the time required in going.

Their language is melodious and ſoft, abounding with vowels, and the Engliſh ſoon learned to pronounce it: but it was extremely difficult to teach them to pronounce a ſingle word of Engliſh: nevertheleſs Spaniſh and Italian words, ending in a vowel, they pronounced with eaſe.

Whether their language was copious, could not be aſcertained; but it is doubtleſs very imperfect, being wholly deſtitute of inflexion, both of nouns and verbs: the nouns, in general, have but one caſe, and few of the verbs more than one tenſe; yet the Engliſh found no great difficulty in making themſelves underſtood, however ſtrange it may appear in ſpeculation.

From

Digitized by Google

From the following liſt of words, ſome idea may probably be formed of the language.

Pupo,	*the head*
Ahewh,	*the noſe*
Roourou,	*the hair*
Outou,	*the mouth*
Niheo,	*the teeth*
Arrero,	*the tongue*
Meu-emi,	*the beard*
Tiarraboa,	*the throat*
Tuamo,	*the ſhoulders*
Tuah,	*the back*
Oama,	*the breaſt*
Eu,	*the nipples*
Oboo,	*the belly*
Rema,	*the arm*
Oporema	*the hand*
Manneow,	*the fingers*
Mieu,	*the nails*
Touhe,	*the buttocks*
Hoohah,	*the thighs*
Avia,	*the legs*
Tapoa,	*the feet*
Booa,	*a hog*
Moa,	*a fowl*
Euree,	*a dog*
Eure-eure,	*iron*
Ooroo,	*bread-fruit*
Hearee,	*cocoa-nuts*
Mia,	*bananas*
Vaee,	*wild plantains*
Poe,	*beads*
Poe matawewwe,	*pearl*

Ahou,

Digitized by Google

Ahou,	*a garment*
Avee,	*a fruit like apples*
Ahee,	*another like chesnuts*
Ewharre,	*a house*
Whennua,	*a high island*
Motu,	*a low island*
Toto,	*blood*
Aeve,	*bone*
Aeo,	*flesh*
Mae,	*fat*
Tuea,	*lean*
Huru-huru	*hair*
Eraow,	*a tree*
Ama,	*a branch*
Tiale,	*a flower*
Huero,	*fruit*
Etummoo,	*the stem*
Aaa,	*the root*
Eiherre,	*herbaceous plants*
Ooopa,	*a pigeon*
Avigne,	*a paroquet*
A-a,	*another species*
Mannu,	*a bird*
Mora,	*a duck*
Mattow,	*a fish-hook*
Toura,	*a rope*
Mow,	*a shark*
Mahi-mahi,	*a dolphin*
Mattera,	*a fishing-rod*
Eupea,	*a net*
Mahanna,	*the sun*
Malama,	*the moon*
Whettu,	*a star*
Whettu-euphe,	*a comet*

Digitized by Google

Erai,	*the ſky*
Eatta,	*a cloud*
Miti,	*good*
Eno,	*bad*
A,	*yes*
Ima,	*no*
Paree,	*ugly*
Paroree,	*hungry*
Pia,	*full*
Timahah,	*heavy*
Mama,	*light*
Poto,	*ſhort*
Roa,	*tall*
Nehenne,	*ſweet*
Mala-mala,	*bitter*
Whanno,	*to go far*
Harre,	*to go*
Arrea,	*to ſtay*
Enoho	*to remain*
Rohe rohe,	*to be tired*
Maa,	*to eat*
Inoo,	*to drink*
Ete,	*to underſtand*
Warrido,	*to ſteal*
Worridde,	*to be angry*
Teparahi,	*to beat*

The natives are afflicted with the eryſipelas, and other cutaneous eruptions of the ſcaly kind, very nearly approaching to a leproſy. A few had virulent ulcers upon different parts of their bodies, but they were not much regarded by thoſe who were afflicted with them, for they were left entirely without application.

Digitized by Google

The management of the ſick is the department of the prieſt, whoſe method of cure conſiſts principally of prayers and ceremonies. Upon viſiting his patient he repeats certain ſentences, which ſeem to be ſet forms deſigned for the occaſion, and alſo plaits the leaves of the cocoa-nut into different ſhapes, ſome of which he faſtens to the fingers and toes of the diſeaſed, and leaves a few branches of the theſpecia populnea, called E'midho: the ceremonies are repeated till the patient recovers or dies. If the former takes place, the remedies, they ſay, cured him; if he dies, the diſeaſe was incurable.

Their ſkill in ſurgery, to judge from the dreadful ſcars ſometimes ſeen, may be ſuppoſed to be very great.

Their intercourſe with the inhabitants of Europe has, however, already entailed upon them that dreadful curſe which avenged the inhumanities committed by the Spaniards in America, the venereal diſeaſe.

The religion of theſe people appeared like the religion of moſt other countries, involved in myſtery. The religious language is different from that which is commonly uſed.

From what could be collected, theſe people ſuppoſe every thing in the univerſe either originally or derivatively to be produced by the conjunction of two perſons. One of theſe original

Digitized by Google

beings they call *Taroataihetoomoo*, and the other, whom they imagine to have been a rock, *Tepapa*. A daughter of these was called *Tetowmatataye*, the year, or thirteen months collectively, which they never mention but upon this occasion; and she, with the common father, produced the months, and these propagated the days: the stars they imagine partly to be the immediate offspring of the first pair, and partly to have increased among themselves; and they have the same idea with regard to the different species of plants. Another progeny of Taroataihetoomoo and Tepapa, they suppose to be an inferior race of deities, or Eatuas. Two of these Eatuas, they pretend, at a remote period of time, inhabited the globe, and were the parents of the first man. This man, their common ancestor, when born, they say, was round like a ball, but that his mother carefully drew out his limbs, and having fashioned him into his present form, she called him *Eothe*, which means *finished*. He being prompted by universal instinct to propagate his species, and being unable to find any other female than his mother, he begot upon her a daughter, and with this daughter other daughters, for many generations, before there was a son; a son, however, being at length produced, he, with his sisters, peopled the universe.

The first progenitors had also a son called *Tane*. Taroataihetoomoo, or the supreme deity, they call the causer of earthquakes; but their prayers are more usually addressed to Tane,

Digitized by Google



A War Canoe.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Tane, whom they imagine takes a greater part in the affairs of the world.

Their numerous ſubordinate deities, or Eatuas, are of both ſexes: the men worſhip the male, and the women the female; and they have reſpective morais, to which the other ſex is not admitted; though they alſo have morais to which both have acceſs. The office of prieſt is performed by men, to both ſexes, but each ſex has its prieſts.

They believe in the immortality of the ſoul, at leaſt that it exiſts in a ſeparate ſtate, and that there are two ſituations of different degrees of happineſs, ſomewhat like our heaven and hell: the moſt exalted ſituation they call *Tavirua t'erai*, the other *Tiaboboo*. However, they are not conſidered by them as places of reward and puniſhment, but as receptacles for different ranks of mortals; the firſt is for their principal people, the other for thoſe of an inferior claſs; not ſuppoſing that their actions here any way influence their future ſtate, or indeed that they are at all regarded by their deities. So that their religion is at leaſt diſintereſted, if it does not influence their morals; and their expreſſions of reverence aud adoration, whether by words or actions, ariſe only from a humble ſenſe of their own inferiority, and the perfection of divine ſuperiority.

Their prieſthood is claimed by heritance; their prieſts or tahowas are numerous, and con-

Digitized by Google

ſit of all ranks of people; however, the chief is generally the younger brother of a good family, and they reſpect him next to their kings. They have the greateſt ſhare of knowledge, which chiefly conſiſts in knowing the names and ranks of the ſeveral eatuas, or ſubordinate divinities, and the opinions relative to the origin of things, which have been preſerved traditionally among the order in detached ſentences, of which an incredible number is often repeated by ſome of them, though ſcarce any of the words made uſe of in their common dialect occur in this repetition.

The prieſts are alſo ſuperior to the reſt of the people in reſpect to navigation and aſtronomy; and indeed the name Tahowa ſignifies a man of knowledge. There being prieſts of every claſs, they officiate among that claſs only to which they belong: the inferior claſs is never called upon by thoſe of ſuperior rank, nor will the prieſt of the ſuperior claſs officiate for any of the inferior rank.

According to what could be obſerved in regard to marriage in this iſland, it is nothing more between the man and woman, than an agreement, which the prieſt has nothing to do with. It appears ſometimes to be pretty well kept, though the parties often ſeparate by mutual conſent, and then a divorce takes place with as little ceremony as the marriage.

Though

Digitized by Google

Though the prieſts have no benefit that accrues from a nuptial benediction, there are two operations which they have appropriated, and from which they derive conſiderable advantages, theſe are tattowing and circumciſion, though neither of them have any thing to do with religion. The tattowing has been already deſcribed; and circumciſion has been adopted merely from cleanly motives; though indeed it cannot properly be called circumciſion, the prepuce not being mutilated by a circular wound, but only ſlit through the upper part, to prevent a contraction over the glans. Neither of theſe can be performed by any but a prieſt, and to be without either is deemed the greateſt diſgrace: ſo that they may be conſidered as a claim to ſurplice fees like our marriages and chriſtenings, which they pay cheerfully and liberally, according to the rank and abilities of the parties or their friends.

The morai, already mentioned, is both a burying-ground and a place of worſhip, and in this particular they alſo much reſemble our churches. They approach the morai with ſuch reverence and humility that diſgraces the Chriſtian, not becauſe he looks upon any thing there as ſacred, but becauſe he worſhips an inviſible divinity there, for whom he always expreſſes the profoundeſt homage and moſt humble adoration, through neither hopes of reward or fear of puniſhment. When an Indian is going to worſhip at the morai, or brings his offering to the altar, he uncovers his body to the

Digitized by Google

the waſte, and his looks as well as attitude ſufficiently expreſs the diſpoſition of mind with which they correſpond.

It could not be perceived that theſe people were, in any inſtance, guilty of idolatry; at leaſt they worſhip nothing that is the work of their hands, nor any part of the creation that is viſible. This iſland indeed, and ſome others that lie near it, have a particular bird, either a heron or a king's fiſher, to which they pay great regard, and have a notion that they indicate good and bad fortune, as we have of the ſwallow and robin-red breaſt. They call them eatua, and never kill or moleſt them; yet they never approach them with any act of adoration, or addreſs them with any petition.

Though it cannot be ſaid that theſe people, who are totally ignorant of the art of writing, and conſequently the recording of laws, have a regular form of government, yet there is eſtabliſhed among them a ſubordination, that reſembles very much the early ſtate of every European nation under the feudal ſyſtem, which ſecured liberty to a few in the moſt licentious exceſs, and upon the reſt entailed the moſt abject ſlavery.

Their orders are, *Earee rahie*, which anſwers to king; *Eare*, baron; *Manahouni*, vaſſal; and *Toutou*, villain. There are two Earee rahie in this iſland, one is the ſovereign of each of the peninſulas, which it conſiſts of; and

Digitized by Google

and he is treated by all ranks with great reſpect, but does not appear to have ſo much power as the Earees exerciſed in their own diſtricts: nor did the Engliſh once ſee the ſovereign of Obereonoo, while they were in the iſland. The Earees are lords of one or more of the diſtricts which the peninſulas are divided into, and there may be about one hundred in the whole iſland of them; they divide their territories amongſt the Manahounies, each cultivating his part which he holds under the baron. The loweſt claſs ſeem to be nearly under the ſame circumſtances as the villains in feudal governments, and are called Toutous: they do all the laborious work, and cultivate the land under the Manahounies, who are nominal cultivators only for the lord; they fetch wood and water, catch fiſh, and dreſs the victuals, under the direction of the miſtreſs of the family.

Each of the Earees keeps a kind of court, and a great number of attendants, who are generally the younger brothers of their own tribe; ſome of whom hold particular offices, but the Engliſh could not tell of what nature exactly. They called one the *Eowa no l'Earee*, and another the *Whanno no l'Earee*, who frequently came to the Engliſh with meſſages. The court of Tootahah was the moſt ſplendid of theſe Earees, which might indeed reaſonably be expected, as he adminiſtered the government for Outou, his nephew, who lived upon his eſtate, and was Earee-rahie of Obereonoo.

The

Digitized by Google

The child of the baron, or Earee, as well as that of the ſovereign, or Earee-rahie, ſucceeds, as ſoon as it is born, to the title and honours of the father: ſo that a baron, who was yeſterday called Earee, and was approached with the uſual ceremonies, would be reduced to the rank of a private man, as ſoon as his wife was delivered of a child, the reſpect which had been paid to the father being transferred to the child, if it is ſuffered to live, though the father ſhall continue poſſeſſor and adminiſtrator of his eſtate. Probably the ſocieties called Arreoy were formed by means of this cuſtom.

Whenever there is a general attack made upon the iſland, every diſtrict under the command of an Earee is under a neceſſity of furniſhing its proportion of ſoldiers for the common defence. The number furniſhed by the principal diſtricts amounted to ſix thouſand ſix hundred and eighty, according to Tupia's account.

Upon theſe occaſions, the united force of the whole iſland is commanded in chief by the Earee-rahie. Other little differences between two Earees, are decided by their own people, without diſturbing the general tranquility.

They make uſe of ſlings for weapons, which they uſe very dexterouſly; pikes headed with the ſtings of ſting-rays, and clubs about ſix or ſeven feet in length, made of a very hard heavy wood. They are ſaid to fight with theſe weapons

Digitized by Google

pons very furiouſly, which is very probable, giving no quarter to either man, woman, or child, who is unfortunate enough to fall into their hands during the combat, or for ſome hours afterwards, till their paſſion has ſubſided, which is very violent, though not laſting.

While the Endeavour was there, the Eareerahie of Obereonoo was in perfect amity with the Earee-rahie of Tiarreboo, the other peninſula, though he called himſelf the king of the whole iſland: this, however, cauſed no more jealouſy in the other ſovereign, than the title of King of France, aſſumed by our king, does in his moſt Chriſtian Majeſty.

In ſo rude a government, it is not to be ſuppoſed that diſtributive juſtice ſhould be adminiſtered regularly; and indeed, where ſo little oppoſition of intereſt is, in conſequence of the facility which every appetite and paſſion is gratified with, there cannot be many crimes. They are thieves, that is certain, but as no one can be much injured or benefited by theft, the puniſhments made uſe of in other countries to reſtrain it, are unneceſſary here. Indeed, the gentlemen were told by Tupia, that adultery is ſometimes committed; and that when the parties are caught in the fact, it is puniſhed ſometimes with death in the firſt heat of reſentment, but otherwiſe the female receives only a beating. There being no law to inforce puniſhment, nor any magiſtrate to take it into hand, it is ſeldom inflicted, except the ſtrongeſt happens

Digitized by Google

happens to be the injured party. The chiefs, however, ſometimes puniſh thoſe who are immediately under them, for committing faults againſt each other, and even thoſe who are ſubſervient to others.

July the 13th, the Engliſh parted with their friends, and made an eaſy ſail, with fine weather, in the courſe of which Tupia informed them, that four of the neighbouring iſlands, known by the names of Huaheine, Ulietea, Otaha, and Bolabola, were not above one or two days ſail from Otaheite; and that ſeveral refreſhments were to be met with there in great plenty; but having perceived from the hills of Otaheite, an iſland to the northward, which he called Tethuroa, the captain determined to ſtand that way firſt, to make a cloſer ſurvey of it. It lies N. half W. eight leagues diſtant from the northern extremity of Otaheite, upon which the tranſit had been obſerved, and which they called Point Venus, for that reaſon. It proved to be a ſmall low iſland, and they were told by Tupia, that it had no fixed inhabitants, but was viſited occaſionally by the inhabitants of Otaheite, who went thither ſometimes for a few days to fiſh: they therefore ſpent no more time in a farther examination of it, but went in ſearch of Huaheine and Ulietea, which he ſaid was as large as Otaheite, and well peopled.

In the morning about eight o'clock, on the 16th, they were cloſe in with the north-weſt part

Digitized by Google

part of the iſland Huaheine, and had above 80 fathom depth of water. Some canoes very ſoon came off, but the people ſeemed timid, keeping at a diſtance, till they diſcovered Tupia, and then they came nearer. The king of the iſland and his wife were in one of the canoes, and after many aſſurances of friendſhip, their majeſties, with ſome others, came on board. They were ſtruck with amazement at firſt, and were aſtoniſhed at every thing that was ſhewed to them; yet they made no inquiries, but ſeemed ſatisfied with what was offered to their notice; their curioſity excited them no farther, though it was natural to ſuppoſe a building of ſuch novelty and magnitude as the ſhip muſt contain variety of objects worthy notice. As ſoon as they became more familiar, the captain was made to underſtand, that the king's name was Oree, and he propoſed that they ſhould exchange names, as a mark of friendſhip. Accordingly he was called Cookee, for ſo he pronounced the captain's name, and the captain was named Oree, for the time they ſtayed together. Theſe people reſembled very much thoſe of Otaheite, in perſon, dreſs, language, and every thing elſe, except that they would not ſteal, as was aſſerted by Tupia.

In the afternoon the Endeavour came to an anchor in an excellent but ſmall harbour on the weſt ſide of the iſland, which the natives call Owharre, ſecure from all winds, clear ground, and eighteen fathom water. The

Digitized by Google

captain immediately went aſhore, accompanied by Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, Mr. Monkhouſe, Tupia, King Cookee, and ſome other of the natives, who had been ever ſince the morning on board. As ſoon as they landed, Tupia ſtripped himſelf as low as the waiſt, and requeſted Mr. Monkhouſe would do the ſame: he then ſat down in preſence of a great number of the natives, who were aſſembled together in a large houſe or ſhed; a houſe here conſiſting only of a roof ſupported upon poles, the ſame as thoſe at Otaheite, the reſt ſtanding behind by his deſire. He then began an oration, which continued about a quarter of an hour, and the king, who ſtood over againſt him, every now and then anſwered what ſeemed to be ſet reſponſes. During this prayer or harangue, he delivered at ſeparate times, a black ſilk neckloth, two handkerchiefs, two ſmall bunches of feathers, ſome beads, and ſome plantains, as preſents to their Eatua, or God. He received in return for theſe, for the gentlemen's Eatua, a hog, two ſmall bunches of feathers, and ſome plantains, which he ordered to be carried on board the ſhip. As ſoon as theſe ceremonies were over, which the gentlemen imagined to be the ratification of a treaty between them, the aſſembly broke up; and Tupia repaired immediately to one of the morais to offer his oblations.

The next morning, going aſhore again, they walked up the hills, where they found every production

production exactly the same as those of Otaheite, except that the clay and rocks seemed to be more burnt. The houses were neat, and the boat-houses very large; one of them measured fifty paces in length, ten in breadth, and twenty-four feet in height; its form was a pointed arch, resembling those of our old cathedrals, supported on one side by twenty-six, and on the other by thirty posts, about two feet in height, and one in thickness, upon most of which were carved, in a rough manner, the heads of men, and several devices of fancy, somewhat like those which we see sometimes in old books, printed from wooden blocks. The flat part of the country abounded in bread-fruit, and cocoa-nut trees; however, in some places, there being salt swamps, and lagoons, nothing was produced.

On the 18th they went ashore again, but had not the advantage of Tupia's company, he being too much engaged with his friends: however, they took his boy, Tayeto, and Mr. Banks went to take a farther view of a kind of chest or ark, which before had engaged his attention; the lid of which was neatly sewed on, and thatched with palm-nut leaves; it was supported on little arches of wood, very neatly carved, and fixed upon two poles: the poles were seemingly for removing it from place to place, as our sedan chairs are managed: in one end of it was a square hole, in the centre of which was a ring that touched the sides, leaving the angles open, so as to form

Digitized by Google

a round hole within a ſquare one. The firſt time this coffer was ſeen by Mr. Banks, he ſuppoſed that ſomething was within, from the aperture at the end being ſtopped with a piece of cloth, which he left untouched: but now the cloth being taken away, he looked into it, and found it empty. The great ſimilitude is remarkable between this repoſitory and the Ark of the Lord among the Jews; but it is ſtill more ſo, that upon enquiring of the boy what it was called, he ſaid, *Ewbarre no Eatua*, the *Houſe of the God:* however, he could give no account of its ſignification or uſe. They had now commenced a kind of traffic with the natives, which went on but ſlowly; for when they offered any thing, not one of them would depend upon his own judgment, but waited for the opinions of twenty or thirty people, which cauſed great loſs of time. Nevertheleſs, they obtained eleven pigs, and determined to try the next day for more.

The next day, therefore, for three hatchets they procured three large hogs; and as they intended to ſail after dinner, King Oree, and ſome others, came on board to take leave of them. The captain gave the king a ſmall plate of pewter, on which was indented this inſcription: "His Britannic Majeſty's ſhip "Endeavour, Lieutenant Cook commander, "16th July, 1769, Huaheine." The captain gave him alſo ſome medals or counters, like the coin of England, ſtruck in the year 1761, with ſome other things; and he promiſed

Digitized by Google

miſed never to part with any of them, particularly the plate. This the captain thought as laſting a teſtimony of his having firſt diſcovered this iſland, as any he could leave there. They now ſet ſail, about half an hour after two in the afternoon, having diſmiſſed our viſitors well ſatisfied.

This iſland ſeems to be a month forwarder than Otaheite in its productions, for we found the cocoa-nuts full of kernel, and ſome of the new bread-fruit fit to eat. The inhabitants make a food of the cocoa-nuts, by mixing them with yams, which they call poe. They are both ſcraped fine, and put into a wooden trough, having incorporated the powder, to which a number of hot ſtones are added, this mixture makes an oily kind of haſty pudding, that the crew reliſhed very well, eſpecially when fried. Not more than eleven or twelve new plants were here diſcovered by Mr. Banks; ſome inſects were found, and a ſcorpion of a ſpecies which he had not before ſeen.

The inhabitants are larger and ſtouter than thoſe of Otaheite. One of the men meaſured ſix feet three inches and an half high; yet they are ſo lazy, that Mr. Banks could not get any of them to go up the hills with him, ſaying, that the fatigue would kill them if they did. The women were fairer than thoſe of Otaheite, and in general more handſome, though none were equal to ſome individuals. Leſs curioſity and timidity ſeemed to

Digitized by Google

appear amongſt them; for, as it has been obſerved, they made no enquiries on board the ſhip; when a gun was fired, they were indeed frighted, but did not fall down as thoſe at Otaheite uſed to do, when the Engliſh firſt arrived among them. However, we can eaſily account for this difference upon another principle; theſe people had not ſeen the Dolphin, but thoſe at Otaheite had. The report of a gun in one was connected with the idea of inſtant deſtruction: to the other, nothing was dreadful in it but the appearance and the ſound, as they had never experienced its power.

It was found that Tupia had commended the natives beyond their merit; for when the gentlemen were aſhore, one of them was detected in thieving, and ſeized by the hair, upon which the reſt, inſtead of running away, as the people of Otaheite would have done, aſſembled together, and made an inquiry into the matter in queſtion. But a reaſon may be aſſigned for this alſo, without allowing them to have ſuperior courage; they knew nothing of the conſequence of European reſentment, which the natives of Otaheite had experienced in many inſtances very fatally. However, it muſt be acknowledged to their honour, that as ſoon as they underſtood what had happened, they diſcovered ſtrong tokens of diſapprobation, and ordered the thief to be ſeverely chaſtiſed.

They

Digitized by Google

They now ſailed for the iſland of Ulietea, which lies S. W. by W. diſtant from Huaheine ſeven or eight leagues. They were within three leagues of the ſhore, on the eaſtern ſide, at half an hour after ſix in the evening. Accordingly, in the morning on the 20th, they ſtood in, and anchored with ſoft ground, and two-and-twenty fathom of water.

Two canoes ſoon came off with the natives, who brought each of them a woman and a pig. They ſuppoſed the woman to be a mark of confidence, and the pig they took for a preſent; both which they received with proper acknowledgments, and complimented each of the ladies with a ſpike nail and ſome beads, which very much pleaſed them. Tupia, who had always expreſſed much fear of the men of Bolabola, told the gentlemen, that this iſland having been made a conqueſt of by them, if they ſtayed here they would certainly come down next day and fight them. In conſequence of this they went on ſhore without delay, while they had the day before them.

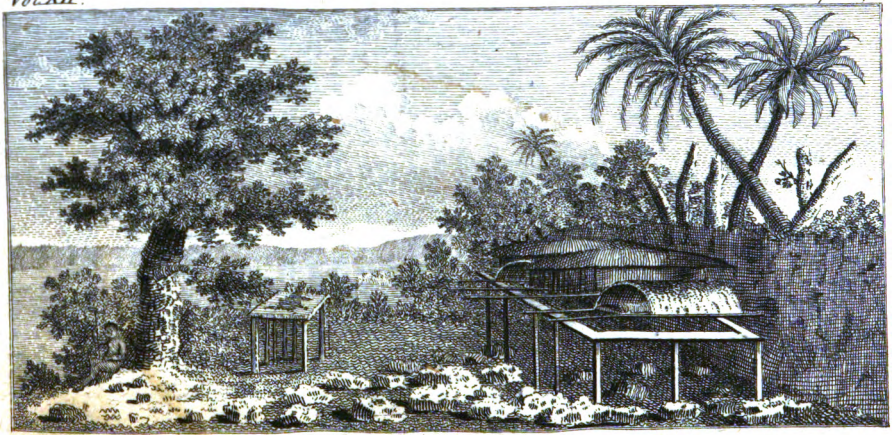
They landed in company with Tupia, who introduced them with the ſame ceremonies that he had made uſe of at Huaheine. The captain then hoiſted an Engliſh jack, and took poſſeſſion of this and the three neighbouring iſland, Huaheine, Otaha, and Bolabola, which they could ſee from thence, in the name of his Britannic Majeſty. After this they walked to a great morai, called Tapodeboatea,

Digitized by Google

boatea, which they found very different from thoſe of Otaheite, conſiſting only of four walls, about eight feet high, of coral ſtones, ſome of which were extremely large. Theſe walls incloſed an area of about five and twenty yards ſquare, which was filled up with ſmaller ſtones: many planks were ſet up an end upon the top of it, and were carved in their whole length. They found an altar, or Ewhatta, at a ſmall diſtance, upon which lay a hog of about eighty pounds weight, very nicely roaſted, which had been the laſt oblation or ſacrifice. Here were alſo four or five Ewharrheno-Eatua, or houſes of God, like that which they had ſeen at Huaheine. Mr. Banks put his hand into it, and found a parcel about five feet in length, and one in thickneſs, wrapped up in matts, through ſeveral of which he broke a way with his fingers; but at length coming to one which was made of the fibres of the cocoa-nut, he found it impoſſible to tear it, being ſo firmly plaited, and therefore was forced to deſiſt, eſpecially as he obſerved that what he had already done offended his new friends very much. They then went to a long houſe not far diſtant from thence, where, among rolls of cloth, and other things, they found the model of a canoe, about three feet long, and eight human jaw-bones tied to it. They were informed that theſe were trophies of war, like the ſcalps among the Indians of North America.

Continuing their walk along the ſhore, at a little diſtance they ſaw another Ewharre-no-Eatua,

Digitized by Google



A Morai or Burial-place.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Eatua, and a tree of the fig kind, ſuch as Mr. Green had ſeen at Otaheite; it was in great perfection, the circumference of the trunk, or rather congeries of the roots, were forty-two paces.

On the 24th the Endeavour put to ſea, but was very near ſtriking on a rock, many of which, in this neighbourhood, are as ſteep as a wall.

The harbour or bay is called by the people here Oopoa, and is capable of holding any number of ſhipping. It extends very near the whole length of the eaſt ſide of the iſland, and is defended by a reef of coral rocks: the ſouthernmoſt opening in this reef, or channel, by which the Endeavour entered into the harbour, is in width little more than a cable's length; it lies off the eaſtermoſt point of the iſland, and may be known by another ſmall woody iſland, which is a little to the ſouth-eaſt of it, called by the natives Oatara. There are two other iſlets, between three and four miles north-weſt from that iſland, which make part of the reef, and are in the ſame direction; theſe are called Opururu and Tamou. The other channel into the harbour lies between theſe, which is a full quarter of a mile wide, and through this the Endeavour went out. Farther to the north-weſt are ſtill ſome other ſmall iſlands, near which, it is ſaid, there is another ſmall channel into the harbour; but this is only report.

In

Digitized by Google

In the afternoon of the 25th, Otaha bore N. 77. W. and they were within a league of it, intending to visit Bolabola, notwithstanding Tupia's apprehensions. About a mile from shore, to the northward of the south end of that island, on the east side of it, are two small islands, called Toahoutu and Whenmuai. Between these islands, Tupia affirmed, there was a channel, leading into a very good harbour, within the reef; and this opinion was confirmed by appearances.

About noon, on the 27th, the peak of Bolabola bore N. 25 W. and the north end of Otaha, N. 80 W. distant three leagues. At six next morning they were near the entrance of the harbour on the east side of Otaha, which has been just spoken of. The captain sent off the master in a long-boat, in which went Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander, in order to traffic with the natives, who before night purchased three hogs, twenty-one fowls, and as many yams and plantains as the boat would contain. They thought plantains a more useful refreshment even than pork; for they served the ship's company, when boiled, instead of bread, and were the more acceptable, as now their bread was so full of vermin, that notwithstanding all the care they took, they sometimes had twenty of them in their mouths at a time, every one of which tasted as hot as mustard. The island, to all appearance, was more barren than Ulietea, but its produce was of the same kind. The natives also resembled in every

respect

Digitized by Google

reſpect thoſe of the other iſlands: theſe were not many in number, but they flocked about the boat from all quarters, wherever ſhe went, bringing whatever they had to ſell with them. The account the natives received of the ſtrangers from Tupia, made them pay them the ſame compliments as they do towards their own kings, which was, to uncover their ſhoulders, and wrap their garments round their breaſts: and they were ſo cautious to prevent their people from neglecting it, that a man exhorted them, and gave the word to every one he met, to behave with proper decorum.

Upon the boat's return, the maſter ſaid, that every thing was proper for our reception; that the anchorage was good, and with a clear ground, from twenty-five to ſixteen fathoms water.

On the 30th, at eight o'clock in the morning, they diſcovered an iſland, which bore from them N. 63 W. diſtant about eight leagues; at which time the peak of Bolabola bore N half E. diſtant three or four leagues. Tupia called this iſland Maurua, and ſaid that it was ſmall, ſurrounded wholly by a reef, and had no harbour for ſhipping; but that it was inhabited, and bore the ſame produce as the reſt of the iſlands. There is an elevation in the middle, that may be diſcerned at ten leagues diſtance.

In

Digitized by Google

In the morning of the 2d of Auguſt, when the tide turned, they moored in twenty-eight fathom, with a ſandy bottom, and many of the natives came off to the ſhip with hogs, fowls, and plantains, which they procured upon their own terms.

The captain then went on ſhore in ſearch of a proper place to get ballaſt and water, both which he found ſuitable to his deſire.

Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander ſpent this day on ſhore very much to their ſatisfaction; all the natives ſeemed to fear and reſpect them, at the ſame time placing in them the greateſt confidence, behaving as if conſcious that it was in their power to do them miſchief, without the leaſt propenſity of doing it. They were ſurrounded by men, women, and children, who followed them wherever they went, without the leaſt rudeneſs: ſo reverſe were they to it, that whenever any dirt or water happened to be in the way, the men vied with each other to take them over on their backs. The principal people received them in an entire new manner. As they proceeded, thoſe who followed them ruſhed forward as ſoon as they got to a houſe, and haſtily entered it before them, forming a lane ſufficiently wide, through which the gentlemen were to paſs. When they entered, thoſe who had preceded them they found ranged on each ſide of a long matt, which was ſpread upon the ground, and the family ſitting at the farther end of it. They found ſome very

Digitized by Google

very young women or children, in the firſt houſe, dreſſed extremely neat, who kept their ſtation, expecting they would come up to them and make them preſents, which was done with the greateſt pleaſure. The children were very pretty, and dreſſed as well as any they had ever ſeen. A girl about ſix years old was one, whoſe gown, or upper garment, was red; a large quantity of plaited hair decorated her head, an ornament which they call tamou, and on which they ſet the greateſt value. Her ſeat was at the upper end of a mat thirty feet in length, upon which, notwithſtanding the crowd, none of the ſpectators preſumed to ſet a foot; and ſhe leaned upon the arm of a good looking woman about thirty, who ſeemed to be her nurſe. The gentlemen went up to her, and as ſoon as they came near, ſhe held out her hand to receive the beads which they intended for her; but this was done with as good a grace as would become any princeſs in Europe.

The gratification which the people received by the preſents made to theſe girls, cauſed them to fix their whole attention on obliging Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander; and in one of the houſes they were entertained with a dance, by the maſter's order, different from any that they had ſeen. This dance was performed by one man, who placed upon his head a large cylindrical piece of wicker-work or baſket, about four feet long, and eight inches in diameter, which was faced with feathers, perpendicularly placed, with the tops bending for-

Digitized by Google

wards: it was edged round with ſhark's teeth, and the tail-feathers of tropic birds. After putting on this head-dreſs, which they call a whow, he began to dance, moving ſlowly, and often turning his head in ſuch a manner, that the top of his high wicker cap deſcribed a circle, and ſometimes toſſing it ſo near the faces of the ſpectators as to make them ſtart back: this was reckoned a very good joke among them, and always produced a peal of laughter, eſpecially when it was aimed at one of the ſtrangers.

On the 3d, the gentlemen went to the northward, along the ſhore, which was in an oppoſite direction to that of the route Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander had taken the preceding day, with an intent to purchaſe ſtock, which they always found cheaper at their houſes, than at the market. In the courſe of this walk, they were detained two hours by a company of dancers, during all which time it afforded them great entertainment. The dancers were two women and ſix men, with three drums. Tupia told the gentlemen, that they were people of the greateſt diſtinction in the iſland, for altho' they were perpetually going from place to place, they did not take any gratuity from the ſpectators, like the little ſtrolling companies of Otaheite. The heads of the women were ornamented with a conſiderable quantity of tamou, or plaited hair, which was wrapped round the head, and adorned in ſeveral parts with flowers of the cape jeſſamine, which were with

with much taſte ſtuck in, and made a very elegant head-dreſs. Their necks, ſhoulders, and arms, as well as the breaſts, to the parting of the arm, were naked; beneath that they were covered with black cloth, which ſat very cloſe. Next the arm, at the ſide of each breaſt, was placed a plume of black feathers, much in the ſame manner as noſegays or bouquets are worn by our ladies. A quantity of cloth plaited very full reſted upon their hips, which reached up to the breaſt, and fell down into long petticoats below, and quite concealed their feet. This they managed with as much dexterity as our opera-dancers could have done: the plaits above the waiſt were white and brown alternately; the petticoats below were entirely white.

They advanced ſideways in a regular ſtep, keeping exact time to the drums, which beat briſkly and loud: they began ſoon after to ſhake their hips, giving a very quick motion to the folds of cloth that lay upon them, which was continued through the whole dance in ſome degree, though the body was thrown into different poſtures, ſometimes ſitting, ſometimes ſtanding, and ſometimes reſting on their knees and elbows: at the ſame time the fingers alſo are moved with a quickneſs ſcarcely to be imagined. The chief part, however, of the dexterity of the dancers, and the entertainment of the ſpectators, conſiſted in their attitudes and geſtures, the wantonneſs of which is beyond deſcription.

Digitized by Google

One of these girls had three pearls in her ear, one of which was very large, but so foul that it was of little value; the two others were as big as a middling pea, and clear, of a good colour and shape, but spoiled by the drilling. Mr. Banks would have purchased them almost at any rate, but the owner could not be persuaded to part with them on any account; the value they set upon their pearls being equal to what they would fetch with us, in the state these were in.

Between the dances of the females, a kind of dramatic interlude was performed by the men, which was a medley of dialogue and dancing, but the gentlemen could not understand the subject, not being acquainted with the language.

Some of the gentlemen, on the 4th, saw a much more regular entertainment in the dramatic way, which was divided into four acts.

Tupia had often said, that he had large possessions in this island, which he had been deprived of by the inhabitants of Bolabola, and he now pointed them out in the very bay where the ship was at anchor. The inhabitants confirmed this when the gentlemen went on shore, and shewed them several districts or whennuas, which they declared to be his right.

The captain received on the 5th, a present of three hogs, some fowls, several pieces of cloth,

Digitized by Google

cloth, the largeſt he had ſeen, being fifty yards long, which they unfolded and diſplayed ſo as to ſhew it to the beſt advantage; alſo a conſiderable quantity of plantains, cocoa-nuts, and other refreſhments, from Opoony, the formidable king, or, in the natives language, Earee-rahie, of Bolabola; a meſſage was received at the ſame time, that he was now upon the iſland, and intended to pay the captain a viſit the next day.

In the interim, Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander went upon the hills, with ſeveral of the Indians, who conducted them a pleaſant way, to ſuch a height, that they eaſily ſaw the other ſide of the iſland, and the paſſage through which the ſhip had paſſed the reef between the little iſlands of Opururu and Tamou, when they the firſt time landed upon it. Upon their return they ſaw the Indians exerciſing themſelves at what they call erowhaw, which is pitching at a mark with a kind of light lance, headed with hard wood: though they ſeem very fond of this amuſement, they do not excel in it, for not above one in twelve hit the mark, which was at about twenty yards diſtance, and was the bole of a plantain-tree.

On the 6th, expecting the viſit of the great king, the gentlemen all ſtaid at home, but were diſappointed; however, they had much more agreeable company, for he ſent three very pretty young females to demand ſomething in return for his preſent. The gentlemen imagined

Digitized by Google

gined he was afraid to truſt himſelf on board the ſhip, or that he thought his meſſengers would obtain a more valuable return for his hogs and poultry than he himſelf could do: however, the gentlemen did not regret his abſence, and they were very well pleaſed with their gueſts.

As the great king would not come to the gentlemen, they determined, in the afternoon, to go to him. They expected to ſee a young and vigorous chief, with a meaning countenance and an enterpriſing ſpirit: inſtead of whom, they found a poor feeble wretch, withered and decrepit, half blind with age, and ſo ſtupid that he ſeemed to have ſcarce underſtanding enough to know that the gentlemen might be gratified either by hogs or women. He received the gentlemen without ſtate or formality, and they made him their preſent, which he accepted, and gave a hog in return. They found his principal reſidence was at Otaha; and as they told him that they intended to go thither the next morning in their boats, and that they ſhould be glad of his company, he promiſed to go with them.

Accordingly, in the morning early, the captain ſet out with both the pinnace and long-boat for Otaha, and ſome of the gentlemen went with him, and called upon Opoony, who was in his canoe ready to join them. Upon their landing at Otaha, Mr. Cook made him a preſent of an ax, which he imagined might in-

duce

duce him to encourage his subjects to help the Engliſh with proviſions; but they were greatly diſappointed, for after ſtaying with him till noon, they could not get a ſingle article. They then proceeded, in the pinnace, to the north point of the iſland, having ſent the long-boat another way. In their way they picked up half a dozen hogs, as many fowls, and ſome plantains and yams. After which they viewed and ſketched the harbour on this ſide of the iſland, and then made the beſt of their way back with the long-boat, which joined them ſoon after it was dark; and they got on board the ſhip about ten o'clock at night.

Having been neceſſarily ſo long detained at Ulietea, by the carpenters in ſtopping the leak, they determined to give up their intention of going on ſhore at Bolabola, eſpecially as it ſeemed difficult to be done.

On the 14th Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander accompanied Mr. Gore in the pinnace and ſet off in order to land on an iſland they ſaw, which Tupia told them was called Oheteroa. Upon their approach towards the ſhore, the natives were perceived to be armed with long lances, and our boat ſtood along the coaſt, with an intent to land, when they got round a certain point; the natives therefore, probably, imagined them to be afraid. The natives on ſhore were in number about ſixty, and were all ſitting down upon the ſhore, except two, who were ſent forward to obſerve the motions of

thoſe

Digitized by Google

thoſe in the boat. Theſe men, after keeping a-breaſt of her ſome time, leaped into the water, and ſwam towards her, but were ſoon left behind, and ſeveral more did the ſame afterwards.

Having made the circuit of the iſland with the ſhip and the boats, and found that there was neither harbour nor anchorage about it, and that the hoſtile diſpoſition of the natives would render it impoſſible to land without bloodſhed, Mr. Cook determined to give it up, there being no motive worth while riſking life.

The natives were luſty and well made, ſomewhat browner than thoſe they had left: they had black marks under their arm-pits, about as broad as the hand, the edges of which formed an indented line; they had alſo circles of the ſame colour round their arms and legs, but not ſo broad, and were not marked on any other part of the body.

Their dreſs, and the cloth of which it was made, was very different from any that had been before ſeen. The materials were the ſame as thoſe which the cloth is made of in the other iſlands, and moſt of that which the Engliſh ſaw was dyed of a bright but deep yellow, and covered on the outſide with a kind of varniſh, either red, or of a dark lead colour; it was again painted over this ground in ſtripes of many different patterns, with amazing regularity, in the manner of our ſtriped ſilks in England; the red was ſtriped with black, and the lead-colour

Digitized by Google

colour with white. The habit they wore was a ſhort thick jacket of this cloth, which reached as low as their knees; it was of one piece, and had a hole in the middle of it, ſtitched round with long ſtitches, different from any that had been ſeen before: through this hole the head was put, and that which hung down was confined by a piece of yellow cloth or ſaſh to their bodies, which paſſing round the neck behind, was croſſed upon the breaſt, and then brought round the waiſt like a belt, which paſſed over another of red cloth; ſo that their appearance was very gay and warlike. Some had caps ornamented with the tropic bird's feathers, which have been deſcribed before; and ſome had a piece of white or lead coloured cloth wound about the head in the form of a ſmall turban.

Their weapons were long lances, made of the etoa, a very hard wood; they were well poliſhed and ſharpened at one end; ſome were almoſt twenty feet long, though not above three fingers thick: they had alſo a weapon which was both club and pike, made of the ſame wood, about ſeven feet long; this alſo was well poliſhed, and ſharpened into a broad point at one end. They have mats folded up many times, which they place under their clothes from the neck to the waiſt, and ſerve them for ſhields. Their weapons are capable of much leſs miſchief than thoſe which were ſeen at the other iſlands. Every thing that was ſeen here was ſuperior in its kind to any the Engliſh had before ſeen; the cloth was of a bet-

ter

Digitized by Google

ter colour in the dye, and was much neater painted; the clubs were cut and poliſhed better, and the canoe was very richly ornamented, though a ſmall one, and the carving was in a better manner executed: among other decorations belonging to this canoe, there was a line of ſmall white feathers, which hung from the head and ſtern on the outſide, and were thoroughly wetted by the ſpray, at the time the gentlemen ſaw them.

They were told by Tupia, that at the diſtance of three days ſail to the north-eaſt, there was an iſland called Manua, Bird Iſland. He, however, was moſt deſirous of their ſailing to the weſtward, deſcribing ſeveral iſlands that he had viſited in that direction. The iſland which was fartheſt to the ſouthward, that he knew any thing of, he told them, lay at the diſtance of about two days ſail from Oteroah, and was called Moutou: but he had been informed by his father, he ſaid, there were to the ſouthward of that ſome iſlands. After all, the captain was determined to ſearch for a continent, and ſtand ſouthward, and take the iſlands in their way, if he ſhould happen to fall in with any.

October 8th, they anchored on the north-weſt ſide of a bay, before the entrance of a ſmall river, the ſides of which are very high white cliffs: the middle is low land, with hills riſing behind gradually, one above another, and

Digitized by Google

and terminating in a chain of mountains which seemed to be far inland.

The captain went on shore in the evening, with Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander, and a party of men. They had both the pinnace and yawl with them, and landed on the east side of the river, which was in this place about forty yards broad. There were some natives on the west side, with whom the captain wanted to speak; but the river not being fordable, he went over in the yawl. As soon as they came near the people who were assembled, they all ran away. However, the English walked up to some huts about two or three hundred yards from the water-side. Being at some distance from the boat, four men, armed with long lances, rushed from the woods, and running up to the boat, would certainly have cut her off, if the people in the pinnace had not seen them, and called to the boys who had been left in the yawl, to drop down the stream: the boys obeyed instantly, but being pursued closely by the natives, the cockswain of the pinnace, who had the care of the boats, fired a musquet over their heads; this made them stop and look round, but they soon renewed their pursuit, brandishing their weapons in a threatening manner: upon this the cockswain fired a second musquet over their heads, but they took no notice of this discharge; and one of them lifting up his spear to dart it at the boat, fired another piece, which shot him dead. When he fell, the three others stood motionless

leſs for ſome time, as if petrified with aſtoniſhment: as ſoon as they recovered, they went away, dragging the dead body after them, which however they ſoon left, that they might get off the ſooner. At the report of the firſt fire, the gentlemen made the beſt of their way back to the boat; and as they were croſſing the river, they ſaw the body lying dead upon the ground. They found, upon examination, that he had been ſhot through the heart. He was a middle-ſized man, of a brown complexion, but not very dark; and one ſide of his face was tattowed in ſpiral lines, of a very regular form: he was covered with a fine cloth, of a new manufacture, and it was tied on exactly according to the repreſentation in Valentyn's Account of Abel Taſman's Voyage, vol. iii. part 2. page 50. His hair was tied alſo in a knot on the top of his head, but without a feather. They immediately returned to the ſhip, where they could hear the people talking on ſhore with great earneſtneſs, and in a very loud tone.

Upon the natives appearing in an hoſtile manner, Tupia told them that the Engliſh would be obliged to kill them if they proceeded to any farther violence. Notwithſtanding, in a few minutes, Mr. Green happening to turn about, one of them ſeized his hanger, and retiring to a little diſtance, exulted with a ſhout, and waved it round his head: the others now began to be very inſolent, and the Engliſh obſerved more coming over to them from

Digitized by Google

from the oppoſite ſide of the river: it was therefore thought neceſſary to repreſs them, and Mr. Banks fired at the man, with ſmall ſhot, who had taken the hanger, at about fifteen yards diſtance: as ſoon as he felt the ſhot, he ceaſed his cry, but continued to flouriſh the hanger over his head, at the ſame time retreating ſlowly to a greater diſtance. Upon which Mr. Monkhouſe fired at him with ball, and he inſtantly fell. The main body now, who, upon the firſt diſcharge, had retired to a rock in the middle of the river, began to return: two that were near to the man who had been ſhot, ran up to the body; one took his weapon of green talc, and the other attempted to ſecure the hanger, which Mr. Monkhouſe prevented juſt in time. Thoſe who had retired to the rock were now advancing, ſo that three of the Engliſh fired upon them with ſmall ſhot, which made them ſwim back to the ſhore; and it was obſerved, upon their landing, that two or three of them were wounded. They went ſlowly up the country, and the Engliſh took to their boats.

The captain found no place where he could land, a dangerous ſurf beating upon every part of the ſhore; but he perceived two canoes coming in from the ſea, one under ſail, and the other worked with paddles. This he thought a favourable opportunity to get ſome of the natives into his poſſeſſion without miſchief, thoſe in the canoes being probably fiſhermen and unarmed. Accordingly he diſpoſed the

Digitized by Google

boats ſo as to intercept them in their way to the ſhore: they were ſoon perceived by the people in the canoe that was paddled, and by making to the neareſt land they eſcaped; the other ſailed on till ſhe diſcovered the Engliſh, when the people on board ſtruck their ſail, and took to their paddles, by which means ſhe outran the boat. However, Tupia called out to them to come along ſide, and promiſed them ſafety; but they preferred truſting to their paddles rather than his promiſes, and continued to make off with all their might. A muſquet was then fired over their heads, with a view of making them ſurrender or leap into the water. As ſoon as the piece was fired, they ceaſed paddling; and they all, being ſeven in number, began to ſtrip, as was thought, to jump overboard; but this was a miſtake, for they immediately were determined not to fly, but to fight; and when the boats came up with them, the Indians began to attack them with their paddles, with ſtones, and other offenſive weapons that were in the boat, ſo reſolutely, that the Engliſh were forced to fire upon them in their own defence, and unhappily four were killed; the other three, who were boys, the eldeſt about nineteen, and the youngeſt about eleven, immediately leaped into the water. The eldeſt ſwam with great vigour, and reſiſted every attempt that was made to take him into the boat by every poſſible effort; but he was at laſt overpowered, and the other two were alſo taken up.

No

Digitized by Google

No ſooner were theſe poor wretches in the boat, than they ſquatted down, expecting, no doubt, to be put to death inſtantly: but the Engliſh were as expeditious as poſſible in convincing them of the contrary; they gave them cloathes, and every other teſtimony of kindneſs that might engage their good-will, and remove their fears. It is not wonderful that the ſudden joy of theſe young ſavages, at being delivered unexpectedly from the fear of death, and tenderly uſed by thoſe whom they imagined would have inſtantly ſacrificed them, ſurmounted the concern for their loſt friends, and was expreſſed ſtrongly in their countenances as well as their behaviour. Their ſuſpicions and fears were entirely removed before they got to the ſhip; they were reconciled to their ſituation, and in high ſpirits, and when they came on board, they eat very heartily of bread. Their queſtions and anſwers were pertinent, and when the gentlemen's dinner was ſerved up, they were willing to taſte every thing they ſaw: among ſeveral other things, the ſalt pork pleaſed them the moſt. At ſunſet they each eat very eagerly a large quantity of bread, and drank above a quart of water; after which they went to ſleep with great ſeeming content, upon the beds which were made them upon the locker. During the night, however, they ſighed often and loud; but Tupia, who was generally upon the watch to comfort them, got up, and by ſoothing made them eaſy and chearful, inſomuch that they ſung a ſong with a ſurpriſing degree of taſte;

Digitized by Google

the tune was ſolemn and ſlow, like thoſe of our Pſalms. They had intelligent and expreſſive countenances, and the middlemoſt, who was about fifteen, had a fine open aſpect, and an eaſy deportment. The names of the two eldeſt, who were brothers, were Taahourange and Koikerange, and the name of the youngeſt was Maragovete. In the way to the ſhip, after they had taken theſe boys into the boat, they picked up out of the water a large piece of pummice-ſtone, which was a proof that there either is, or has been a volcano in this part of the world.

In the morning of the 10th, they were chearful, and eat another hearty meal; the Engliſh then dreſſed them, and adorned them with braceelets, anclets, and necklaces, in their own way; and the boat being got ready, they were told that they were going to be put aſhore: they ſeemed much pleaſed at this; but upon perceiving that they were going aſhore at the firſt landing-place near the river, their countenances changed, and they begged that they might not be ſet aſhore there, becauſe they ſaid the inhabitants were their enemies, who would kill and eat them. This diſappointed the Engliſh much, becauſe they were in hopes that the report and appearance of the boys would be of ſervice to themſelves. An officer was already ſent on ſhore, with the marines, and a party of men to cut wood, which made the captain determine to land near the place, and not to abandon the boys when they got aſhore, if they were

Digitized by Google

were willing to ſtay; but to ſend them in the evening to that part of the bay to which they pointed, and which they ſaid was their home, Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, and Tupia, being with the captain, they landed with the boys, and croſſing the river, the boys ſeemed unwilling at firſt to leave them; but at length they ſuddenly changed their mind, and took their leave, not without a ſtruggle which cauſed them to ſhed tears. As ſoon as they were gone, the gentlemen proceeded along a ſwamp, with an intent to ſhoot ſome ducks, there being great plenty, and four of the marines attended them, walking upon a bank that commanded a proſpect of the country. They had not gone on above a mile, before theſe men called out to the gentlemen, and told them, that a conſiderable body of the Indians was in ſight, and coming on at a great rate. Hearing this, they drew together, and were determined to make the beſt of their way to the boats: they had hardly begun to put this into execution, when the three Indian boys ſuddenly ſtarted from ſome buſhes, where they had hid themſelves, and again claimed protection. The gentlemen received them readily, and repaired to the beach, as the cleareſt place, walking briſkly towards the boats. The natives were in two bodies; one ran along the bank, which the marines had quitted; the other went round by the ſwamp, ſo that the gentlemen could not ſee them: when the Indians perceived the Engliſh all together in a body, they ſlackened their pace, but ſtill followed in

Digitized by Google

a gentle walk: their having ſlackened their pace was a fortunate circumſtance for the Engliſh as well as for them; for when the Engliſh came to the river-ſide, where they expected to find the boats that were to carry them over to the wood-cutters, they ſaw the pinnace at leaſt a mile from her ſtation, having been ſent to pick up a bird which the officer on ſhore had ſhot; ſo that the little boat was obliged to make three trips before they could join the reſt of the party. As ſoon as they had formed themſelves on the other ſide, the Indians came down, not as was expected, in a body, but by two or three at a time, all armed, and in a little time their number increaſed to about two hundred. The Engliſh now deſpaired of pacific terms; finding that their ſmall arms did not keep the Indians in awe, and that the ſhip was at too great a diſtance to reach the place with a ſhot, they reſolved to re-imbark, leſt they ſhould be embroiled in another quarrel, and coſt more of the Indians their lives. Accordingly they advanced towards the pinnace, which was now returning, when one of the boys cried out ſuddenly, that his uncle was among the people who had marched down to them, and deſired the gentlemen would ſtay to talk with them. With this they complied, and a parley commenced immediately between Tupia and the Indians; during which the boys held up the things which had been given them, as tokens of the gentlemen's liberality and kindneſs; but neither of the boys would ſwim over to them, nor any of them to the boys.

The

Digitized by Google

The body of the man who had been ſhot the day before ſtill lay upon the beach; the boys ſeeing it cloſe to the Engliſh, went up to it, and covered it with ſome of the clothes which they had received from the gentlemen: and preſently after a ſingle man, unarmed, who proved to be the uncle of the youngeſt of the boys, ſwam over to the Engliſh, with a green branch in his hand, which was concluded to be an emblem of peace, as well here as at Otaheite. Tupia received his branch, and gave it to the gentlemen, who made the Indian many preſents; they alſo invited him to go on board the ſhip, which he declined; they therefore left him, and were ſurprized to find that his nephew, and the two other young Indians, choſe rather to go with them than with the natives. As ſoon at the Engliſh had retired, he gathered another green branch, and approached the dead body with it, walking ſideways, with many ceremonies, and then threw it towards the corpſe. When this was done, he went back to his companions, who were ſitting down upon the ſand to obſerve the iſſue of his negotiation: they directly gathered round him, and continued above an hour in a body, without taking any farther notice of the Engliſh. The gentlemen's curioſity was greater than the Indians, for they obſerved them with their glaſſes from on board the ſhip, and ſaw ſome of them croſs the river upon a kind of raft, or catamarine, and four of them carry off the dead body which the boy had covered, upon a kind of bier, and over which the

Digitized by Google

the ceremony of the branch had been performed by the uncle.

Tupia was desired, after dinner, to ask the boys, if they had now any objection to going ashore where they had left the uncle, the body having been carried off, which was a ratification of peace, as it was understood; they said they had not; and the boat being ready, they got into it with great alacrity: when the boat came to land, they also went willingly ashore; but presently after she put off, they returned to the rocks, and walking into the water, entreated earnestly to be taken again on board; but the people in the boat could not comply, having positive orders to the contrary. The gentlemen were very attentive to what passed on shore, keeping a constant watch with their glasses; and they saw a man pass the river upon a raft, and fetch the boys to a place where were assembled forty or fifty of the natives, who closed round them, and continued there till sun-set: upon looking again, when they saw them in motion, they could distinguish plainly their three prisoners, who left the rest, coming down to the beach, and having waved their hands towards the ship three times, they ran nimbly back to join their companions, who walked on leisurely towards that part which the boys had pointed to as their home: the gentlemen therefore judged that no mischief would happen to them, especially as they went off in the clothes which had been given

Digitized by Google

given them, which the gentlemen plainly could perceive.

When it was dark, loud voices, as uſual, were heard on ſhore in the bottom of the bay, the meaning of which never could be found out.

October the 11th, at ſix o'clock in the morning, the Endeavour weighed, and ſtood away from this inhoſpitable and unfortunate place, to which the captain gave the name of Poverty Bay, and which is called by the natives Taoneroa, or Long Sand, not having afforded them a ſingle article, except a little wood. It lies in latitude 38. 42. S. and longitude 181. 36. W. it is in the form of an horſe-ſhoe.

They lay becalmed in the afternoon, which being perceived by the people on ſhore, ſeveral canoes put off, and came within a quarter of a mile of the veſſel; but would not come nearer, though Tupia exerted all the powers of his lungs in endeavouring to perſuade them to it, and promiſing that they ſhould not be hurt. They now ſaw another canoe coming from Poverty Bay, with only four people in it, one of whom they had ſeen in their firſt interview upon the rock. This canoe, without taking the leaſt notice of the others, or ſtopping, came directly along ſide the veſſel, and they got the Indians on board with very little perſuaſion. The reſt ſoon followed them, and there

Digitized by Google

there were ſeven canoes, and about fifty men about the ſhip. The gentlemen made them all preſents very liberally; yet they were ſo deſirous to have ſtill more of the Engliſh commodities, that they parted with every thing they had, even the clothes from their backs, and the paddles from their boats. They had but two weapons among them, and theſe were the inſtruments of green talc, ſhaped ſomewhat like a pointed battledore, with a ſhort handle and ſharp edges; they called them patoo-patoo; they were well contrived for cloſe fighting, and would certainly ſplit, at a ſingle blow, the thickeſt ſcull.

After theſe people had recovered themſelves from their firſt dread, which, notwithſtanding their reſolution in coming to the ſhip, had thrown them into ſome confuſion, the gentlemen inquired after the poor boys; and were informed that they were well, and at home; and that the inducement to venture on board proceeded from the account which the boys had given of the kindneſs with which they had been treated, and the wonders that the ſhip contained.

They ſhewed every ſign of friendſhip to the Engliſh while they were with them, and invited them to go back to their old bay, or to a ſmall cove, which they pointed out, that was ſomewhat nearer; but the captain preferred proſecuting his diſcoveries to going back, having

ing reaſon to imagine that he ſhould find a better harbour than any he had ſeen yet.

The canoes put off about an hour before ſun-ſet, with the few paddles they had reſerved, with which they could ſcarcely get on ſhore; but by ſome means they left three of their people behind: upon which the Engliſh hailed them; but none of them would return to take them on board; at which the gentlemen were much ſurpriſed; but they were ſtill more aſtoniſhed to obſerve that the Indians who were deſerted did not ſeem uneaſy at their ſituation, but entertained them with ſinging and dancing in their manner, and after ſupper went quietly to bed.

Soon after it was dark, a light breeze ſpringing up, the Endeavour ſteered along the ſhore under an eaſy ſail till midnight, and then brought to, after which it ſoon fell calm; being now ſome leagues diſtant from the place where the canoes had left them, at day-break the Indians perceived it, and were ſeized with conſternation and terror, lamenting their ſituation in loud complaints and many tears. Tupia, with much difficulty, pacified them; and the next morning about ſeven o'clock, a light breeze ſpringing up, they continued to ſtand along the ſhore ſouth-weſt. Luckily two canoes came off about this time, and made towards the ſhip: however, they ſtopped at a little diſtance, and ſeemed unwilling to truſt themſelves nearer. The three Indians were agitated

agitated very much in this ſtate of uncertainty, and urged their countrymen to come along ſide of the ſhip, with the utmoſt impatience and eagerneſs. Tupia interpreted what they ſaid, and the gentlemen were aſtoniſhed to find, that they aſſured the people in the canoes, the Engliſh did not eat men. Seriouſly the gentlemen began now to believe that this horrid cuſtom prevailed among them; for what the boys had ſaid was looked upon as a mere hyperbolical expreſſion, proceeding from fear. At length one of the canoes ventured to come cloſe to the ſhip; and an old man came on board, who appeared to be a chief by the finery of his garment, and the ſuperiority of his weapon, being a patoo-patoo, made of bone, that, as he ſaid, came from a whale. He ſoon went away, and took the three Indians with him, very much to the ſatisfaction of all parties.

In ſteering along the ſhore, at noon, they came to a ſmall iſland, which the natives call Teahowray, and which Mr. Cook named the Iſland of Portland, from the great reſemblance it bore to Portland in the Engliſh Channel. It is about a mile from a point on the main; but there is a ridge of rocks, which ſeem to extend nearly, if not quite, from one to the other.

In continuing their courſe, they ſaw the natives, in great numbers, aſſembled as well upon Portland Iſland as the main: they could alſo

Digitized by Google

alſo diſtinguiſh ſeveral ſpots of cultivated ground; ſome appeared to be freſh turned up, and lay like ploughed land, in furrows, and ſome had plants upon them. They ſaw alſo high rails in two places, upon the ridges of hills, like what they had ſeen at the north-eaſt head of Poverty Bay, upon the peninſula: as they were only ranged in lines, and not ſo as to incloſe an area, they were at a loſs to find out their uſe, and therefore imagined them to be the effect of ſuperſtition.

The iſland now was within a mile of them, making in white cliffs, and a ſpit of low land, of a conſiderable length, running from it towards the main. There were vaſt numbers of people ſitting on the ſides of theſe cliffs, who looked at the ſhip with a fixed attention; and it is probable that they obſerved ſome hurry and confuſion on board, while the ſhip was getting clear of the ſhallow water and broken ground, from which they might infer that thoſe on board were in diſtreſs or alarmed. It was imagined that they wiſhed to take advantage of the ſituation of the Engliſh, for five canoes full of men, and well armed, were put off with the greateſt expedition: they came ſo near, and ſhewed ſo hoſtile a diſpoſition, by ſhouting, brandiſhing their lances, and uſing threatening geſtures, that the Engliſh were in ſome pain for their ſmall boat, which was ſtill employed in ſounding; they therefore fired a muſquet over the natives, who finding no harm had come to them, ſeemed to

Digitized by Google

be rather provoked than intimidated, and therefore a four-pounder was fired wide of them, charged with grape-shot: this was more effectual, for they all rose up and shouted upon the report of the piece, and instead of continuing the chace, after a short consultation, they went away quietly.

Being at anchor, they had two more canoes come off to them, but after throwing presents to the men on board of them, they went off well pleased, Tupia not being able to persuade them to come on board the ship.

The 14th, in the morning, they had a view of the inland mountains, upon which the snow still was lying: the country near the shore was low, and not fit for culture, though in one place they could discern something yellow, which had much the appearance of a corn-field, yet was perhaps nothing more than some dead flags, which are pretty common in swampy places. They saw at some distance groves of trees, which appeared high and tapering, and not being above two leagues from the cod which is south-west of the great bay, in which they had been coasting for the two last days, the captain hoisted out the pinnace and long-boat in search of fresh water; but just as they were a-going to put off, they saw several boats coming from the shore full of people, and therefore the captain did not think it safe for them to leave the vessel. About ten o'clock, five of these boats drawing together, as if to hold

Digitized by Google

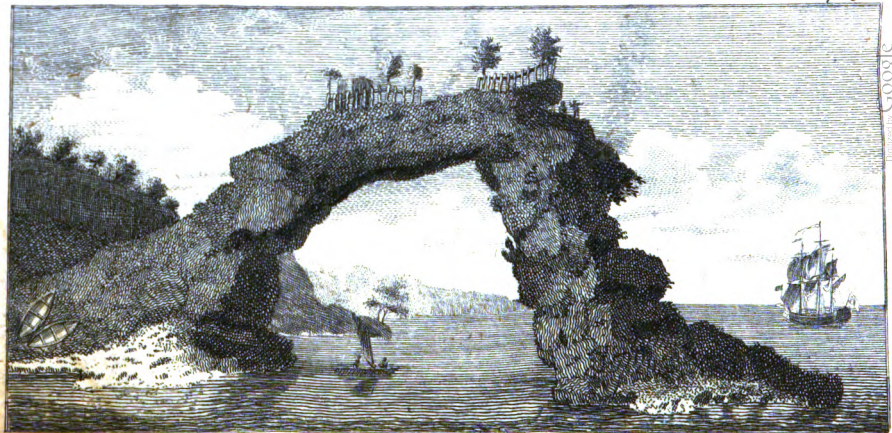
hold a conſultation, made up to the ſhip, having on board between eighty and ninety men, and four more came after them at ſome diſtance, as if to ſuſtain the attack: when the firſt were within about a hundred yards of the ſhip, they began their war ſong, and brandiſhing their pikes, prepared for combat. No time was now to be loſt, for if the Engliſh ſuffered them to attack, they muſt have come under the diſagreeable neceſſity of uſing their firearms againſt them, which they were very loth to do. They therefore ordered Tupia to acquaint them, that the weapons of the Engliſh, like thunder, would deſtroy them in a moment; that the Engliſh would convince them immediately of their power, by directing their effect ſo as not to hurt them; but that if they perſiſted in any hoſtile attempt, they would be forced to uſe them for their own defence. A four pounder, loaded with grape-ſhot, was then diſcharged wide of them, which produced the deſired effect; the report, the flaſh, and particularly the ſhot, which ſpread a great way in the water, ſo intimidated them, that they began to make off as faſt as poſſible: however, Tupia calling after them, and aſſuring them, that if they would quit their weapons they ſhould be received kindly, the men in one of the boats left their arms on board of another, and came under the ſhip's ſtern. The Engliſh gave them ſeveral things, and ſhould have undoubtedly prevailed upon them to come on board, if the other canoes had not come up, and threatened the Engliſh again in the uſual

Digitized by Google

manner: at which the people who had come unarmed to the ſhip were very much diſpleaſed, and they all went away ſoon after.

At eight in the morning, on the 15th, being a-breaſt of the point, ſeveral fiſhing boats came off to the ſhip, and ſold them ſome ſtinking fiſh: they had no better, and the Engliſh were willing to trade with them at any rate. Little Tayeto, Tupia's boy, was, with ſome others, placed over the ſhip's ſide, to hand up what was bought; and one of the Indians, watching his opportunity, ſeized him ſuddenly, and dragged him down into their canoe: two of them held him down, and the others, with great activity, paddled her off, the reſt of the canoes making after her as faſt as poſſible: upon this the marines, who were upon deck under arms, were ordered to fire; they directed the ſhot to that part of the canoe which was moſt diſtant from the boy, and rather wide of her, being willing rather to miſs the rowers than to hurt him. It however happened, that one man dropped, upon which the others let go the boy, who leaped inſtantly into the water, and ſwam towards the ſhip; a large canoe pulled round immediately, and followed him, but ſome muſquets, and a great gun, being fired at her, ſhe gave up the purſuit. The ſhip was brought to, and a boat being lowered, the poor boy was taken up unhurt, but ſo terrified, that for ſome time he ſeemed to be deprived of his ſenſes. Some of the gentlemen, who traced the canoes to ſhore with

Digitized by Google



An Arched Rock on the Coast of New Zealand

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

with their glaſſes, ſaw three men carried up the beach, who appeared to be either dead, or very badly wounded. The captain called the cape off which this tranſaction happened, Cape Kidnappers.

As ſoon as Tayeto had got over his fright, he brought Tupia a fiſh, and told him that he intended it as an offering to his eatua, or god, in gratitude for his eſcape: his piety was commended by Tupia, but he ordered him to throw the fiſh into the ſea, which he accordingly did.

Nothing worth notice happened from the 15th till the 18th, in the evening, when being abreaſt of the peninſula within Portland Iſland, called Terakako, a canoe came off from ſhore, and overtook the ſhip with much difficulty: on board of the canoe were five people, two of whom appeared to be chiefs, and the reſt ſervants: with very little invitation the chiefs came on board, and ordered the others to remain in the canoe. The gentlemen were as kind to them as poſſible, and they were thoroughly ſatisfied: after going down into the cabin, they told the gentlemen that they had determined to ſtay on board till the next morning: but this was an honour neither expected nor deſired; the captain remonſtrated againſt it ſtrongly, telling them, that it would not be proper on their account, as the ſhip would probably be the next morning at a great diſtance from where ſhe then

Digitized by Google

was. They ſtill perſiſted in their reſolution, and the captain was in a manner obliged to comply; as a neceſſary precaution, however, he propoſed taking their ſervants alſo on board, and hoiſt their canoe into the ſhip, to which they made no objection, and it was done accordingly. From the countenance of one of theſe chiefs, which was the moſt open and ingenuous of any ever ſeen, the captain very ſoon entertained the moſt favourable opinion of him. Every thing they ſaw was examined with great curioſity and attention by them, and ſuch little preſents as the gentlemen made them were thankfully received; but they could get neither of them to eat or drink, but their ſervants were voracious in point of eating. Theſe men, it ſeemed, had heard of the kindneſs and liberality ſhewn to their countrymen who had been before on board, yet the gentlemen thought they placed in them that confidence which ſhewed an extraordinary inſtance of their fortitude. At day-light the captain made ſail, and at ſeven in the morning he brought to again, and ſent away their gueſts with their canoe, who were ſurprized to find themſelves ſo far from home.

The Endeavour this day paſſed a remarkable head-land, which captain Cook named Gable-end-Foreland.

On the 20th, the weather being fair, in the evening, the boats were ordered out again, and Mr. Cook landed, with Mr. Banks and Dr.

Dr. Solander. The natives received them in a very amicable manner, and behaved with great attention not to offend them: they particularlarly took care not to appear in great bodies; the inhabitants of two or three houſes only, or one family, were generally together, to the number of fifteen or twenty, conſiſting of men, women, and children. They ſat upon the ground, not advancing towards the gentlemen, but inviting the gentlemen to them, by a kind of beckon, with moving one hand towards the breaſt. The gentlemen gave them ſeveral things as tokens of their friendſhip; and in walking round the bay they found two ſmall ſtreams of freſh water. The friendly behaviour of the people, added to this diſcovery, determined the captain to ſtay at leaſt a day, that they might fill their empty caſks, and give Mr. Banks an opportunity of ſurveying the country.

On the 21ſt, Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander ranged the bay, found many plants, and ſhot ſome beautiful birds. They viſited ſeveral houſes of the natives, and ſaw in ſome reſpect their manner of life: being no ways reſerved, they ſhewed the gentlemen every thing which they requeſted to ſee: if they were found at their meals, the approach of the ſtrangers never interrupted them. Their food, at this time of the year, conſiſted of fiſh, with which they eat the root of a kind of fern, inſtead of bread. They ſcorch them over the fire, and then beat them with a ſtick, till the bark and dry

Digitized by Google

dry outside fall off; the remaining part is a ſoft ſubſtance, ſomewhat clammy and ſweet, not unpleaſing to the taſte, but being mixed with three or four times its quantity of ſtrings and fibres, renders it rather diſagreeable; for though they were ſwallowed by ſome, they were ſpit out by the far greater number, who kept baſkets under them to receive the rejected part of what had been chewed, which looked like tobacco in the ſame ſtate. It is certain they have plenty of excellent vegetables in other ſeaſons; but they had no tame animals among them except dogs, which were very ugly and ſmall. Some of their plantations, which Mr. Banks ſaw, were as well tilled, and in as good condition, as even the gardens of the moſt curious people among us: in theſe places were ſome gourds, ſweet potatoes, and cocos, or eddas, which are well known and much eſteemed both in the Eaſt and Weſt Indies. The gourds were ſet in ſmall hollows, or diſhes, much as in England; the ſweet potatoes were planted in ſmall hills, ranged in rows, and in quincunx, all laid with the greateſt regularity by a line; and the cocos were planted upon flat land, but none appeared yet above ground. Theſe plantations were of different extent, from one or two acres to ten: altogether comprized, there appeared to be in the whole bay from 150 to 200 acres in cultivation, though an hundred people were never ſeen by the Engliſh. Each diſtrict was generally fenced in with reeds, which were fixed

Digitized by Google

fixed so close together that the smallest animal could scarcely get between.

The females were plain, and by painting their faces with red ocre and oil they appeared more so, which being generally wet upon their cheeks and foreheads, easily came off, and the noses of those who thought fit to salute them shewed what they had been doing: by the noses of several of Capt. Cook's people, they were no way averse to such familiarity. However, they were as great coquets as any of the most fashionable ladies in Europe, and the young ones as wanton as possible. A petticoat, with a girdle underneath it, was wore by each of them: the petticoat was made of the blades of grass highly perfumed, and to the girdle hung a small bunch of the leaves of some fragrant plant, which was the innermost veil to their modesty. The faces of the men were not painted so generally, yet the English saw one whose whole body, and even his garments, were rubbed over with dry ocre; keeping a piece constantly in his hand to renew the decoration in any part where it might, as he imagined, become deficient. They were not equal to the natives of Otaheite in personal decacy, as they could not bathe so often for the coldness of the climate; but the English saw one instance of cleanliness in which they exceeded them: every house, or every little cluster of three or four houses, was furnished with a necessary, so that the ground was every

where

Digitized by Google

where clean. Alſo the offals of their food, and other litter, were piled up in regular dunghills; which they might make uſe of at a proper time for manure.

On account of the ſurf it was exceedingly difficult to get water on board, ſo that the captain determined to ſtay no longer at this place; therefore the next morning about five o'clock he weighed anchor and put to ſea.

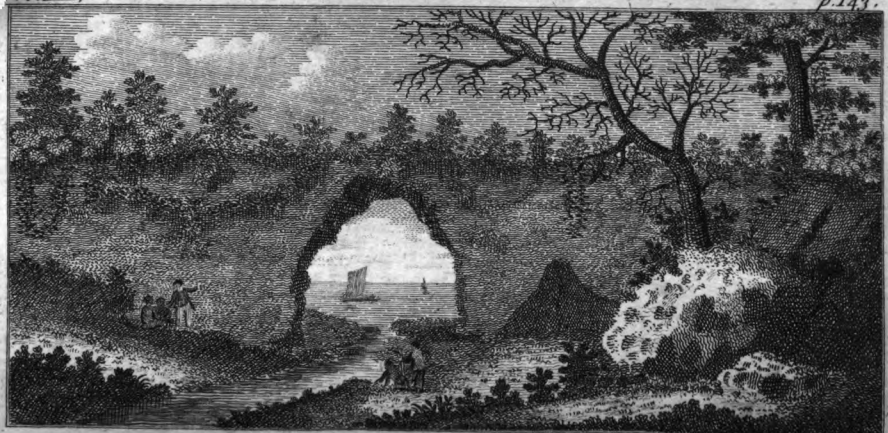
In their courſe, ſome of the natives came on board, and informed the captain, that in a bay which lay to the ſouthward, where there was no ſurf, he might get excellent water. Accordingly the captain ſent two boats, properly equipped, to examine the place, and was confirmed in what the Indians had reported as ſoon as they returned. About one o'clock the ſhip came to an anchor, and many canoes came off immediately from the ſhore, who traded very honeſtly for Otaheite cloth and glaſs bottles, which they were very fond of.

The next morning Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander went on ſhore to gather plants, and ſaw ſeveral things worthy of notice. There were many houſes in the vallies that ſeemed to be wholly deſerted, the people living in a kind of ſheds, very ſlightly built on the ridges of the hills. The hills on each ſide of the vallies were very ſteep; and as the gentlemen were walking in one of them, they were ſtruck ſuddenly with the ſight of a very extraordinary natural

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google



A perforated Rock in Tolago Bay

Digitized by Google

natural curiosity; this was a perforated rock through its whole substance, which formed a rude but stupendous arch or cavern, directly opening to the sea: this aperture was seventy-five feet long, twenty-seven broad, and five and forty high, commanding a prospect of the bay, and the hills on the opposite side, which were seen through it, and opening upon the view all at once, produced an effect far superior to any contrivance of art.

On their return to the watering-place in the evening, they met an old man, who shewed them their military exercises with the lance and patoo-patoo, which are the only weapons they make use of. Their lance is from ten to fourteen feet long, made of a very hard wood, and sharp at both ends; the patoo-patoo was the same as that already described. He set up a post for his enemy, to which he advanced, brandishing his lance, with a most furious aspect: when it was supposed to have been pierced by his lance, he ran with his patoo-patoo at it, and falling upon the upper end of it, which represented the head of his adversary, he laid on with such strength, striking many blows, that one of them was sufficient to have split the scull of an ox. By this method of fighting it was natural to infer, that in this country there is no quarter given in their battles.

The 25th, Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander went again on shore to search for plants; during

Digitized by Google

during which time Tupia ſtaid with the waterers: among other Indians who came down to them, was a prieſt, with whom Tupia had a very learned converſation.

Being aſhore on the 26th, Dr. Solander purchaſed a boy's top of the natives, exactly ſhaped like thoſe which children play with in England; and they gave the gentlemen to underſtand that it was to be whipped in order to make it ſpin. Mr. Banks, in the interim, went aſhore at the watering-place, and climbed a hill, which was at a little diſtance, to ſee a fence of poles, which the gentlemen had perceived from the ſhip, and which had been much the ſubject of ſpeculation. It was an extreme ſteep hill, and the wood made it almoſt inacceſſible; yet he reached the place, cloſe by which he ſaw many houſes that had been deſerted by their inhabitants on ſome particular account. The poles ſeemed to be about ſixteen feet high, which were placed in two rows, with a ſpace of about ſix feet between them, and the poles of each row were about ten feet diſtant from the other. The lane between them was covered with ſticks, that were on each ſide ſet up ſloping towards each other from the top of the poles, like the roof of a houſe. This rail-work, and a ditch that was parallel to it, was carried about a hundred yards down the hill, in a kind of curve; but the gentlemen could not gueſs for what purpoſe.

Digitized by Google

They were entertained at the watering-place, by their desire with their war-song, in which the women joined, with a countenance most horridly distorted, rolling their eyes, thrusting out their tongues, and often fetching loud and deep sighs; notwithstanding all was done in very good time.

On the 28th, being ashore upon an island that lies to the left hand of the bay, they saw the largest canoe that they had met with yet; she was sixty-eight feet and a half in length, five broad, and three feet six in height; she had a sharp bottom, and consisted of three trunks of trees hollowed, the middle-most being the longest: the side planks were in one piece, and sixty-two feet long. They were not badly carved in bass relief; and the head was adorned with still richer carving. There also was a larger house than any they had yet seen; but it seemed yet unfinished, being full of chips. The wood work was squared so even and smooth, that it was concluded they must have very sharp tools among them. The sides of the posts were carved in a masterly manner, after their whimsical taste, prefering seemingly spiral lines and distorted faces: as these carved posts appeared to have been brought from some other place, such work is of great value among them, in all probability.

On the 29th early in the morning, having got on board their wood and water, and a large quantity of excellent celery, which here is in

Digitized by Google

great plenty, and which proved a ſtrong antiſcorbutic, capt. Cook unmoored and put to ſea.

The natives call this bay Tolaga; it is moderately large, and has from 7 to 13 fathom water, with a clean ſandy bottom and good anchorage; and is ſheltered from all winds except the north eaſt. It lies in latitude 38° 22′ S. and on the ſouth point lies an high but ſmall iſland ſo near as not to be diſtinguiſhed from the main. At the entrance into the bay, near the north end of the iſland, are two high rocks; one is round like a corn-ſtack, but the other is long and perforated in ſeveral places ſo as to appear like the arches of a bridge. Within theſe rocks is the cove where they filled their water-caſks and cut their wood. There is a pretty high rocky iſland off the north point of the bay; and about a mile without it are ſome rocks and breakers.

The ridges of the hills here produce ſcarce any thing but fern; but the ſides are moſt richly clothed with wood and verdure of different kinds, intermixed with little plantations. They found in the woods above twenty different ſorts of trees, and carried ſpecimens on board of each; but they were altogether unknown to every one among them. The tree which they uſed for firing was not unlike maple, and produced a whitiſh gum. They met with another ſort of it of a deep yellow, which they thought might be uſeful in dying; and they alſo found one cabbage tree, which they cut down for

Digitized by Google

for the cabbages. This country abounds with plants, and the woods with great variety of birds, exquiſitely beautiful, and which none of them had the leaſt knowledge of. The ſoil both of the hills and valleys is ſandy and light, and very fit for the production of all kinds of roots; though they ſaw none except yams and ſweet potatoes.

Before the ſhip left the bay, the gentlemen cut upon one of the trees near the watering-place the ſhip's name, and that of the commander, with the date of the year and month when they were there; and, after diſplaying the Engliſh colours, capt. Cook took poſſeſſion of it in form in the name of his Britannic majeſty king George the Third.

On the 18th of November, captain Cook was abreaſt of a very conſpicuous promontory, where there ſtood many people, who ſeemed to not regard the ſhip, but talked together with great earneſtneſs. Half an hour after this, ſeveral canoes put off from different places, and came towards the ſhip; upon which the inhabitants on the point alſo ſent off a canoe, and about twenty of them came up in her with the reſt. When two of theſe canoes, which contained about ſixty men, came near enough to make themſelves heard, they ſung their war-ſong; but ſeeing that the ſhip took little notice of it, they threw a few ſtones at her, and then rowed off towards the ſhore. Captain Cook

Digitized by Google

was in hopes that he had now done with them, but in a ſhort time they returned, as if with a fixed reſolution to provoke the ſhip to battle, ſinging their ſong as they had done before. Tupia on his own accord went to the poop, and began to expoſtulate: he told them, that the ſhip had weapons on board which would deſtroy them in a moment; and that, if they ventured to attack her, the captain would be obliged to uſe them. Upon this their weapons were flouriſhed, and they cried out in their language, "come on ſhore, and we will kill you all:" "Well, ſaid Tupia, but why ſhould you moleſt us while we are at ſea? as we do not deſire to fight, we ſhall not accept your challenge to come on ſhore; and here can be no pretence for a quarrel, the ſea being no more your property than the ſhip's." Tupia's eloquence, tho' it greatly ſurpriſed the gentlemen, had no effect upon theſe people, who very ſoon renewed their battery: a muſquet was then fired thro' one of their boats, and by dint of this mode of argument they immediately fell aſtern and left the ſhip.

About three o'clock, on the 21ſt, having the tide of ebb, captain Cook weighed, and made ſail, till eight in the evening, when he came to an anchor again: early in the morning of the 22d he made ſail with the firſt ebb, and kept plying till the flood obliged him once more to come to an anchor. As he had now only a light breeze, he went in the pinnace, ac-

Digitized by Google

accompanied by Dr. Solander, to the weſtern ſhore; but ſaw nothing worthy of notice.

Many canoes were about the ſhip during captain Cook's abſence, and Mr. Banks being on board, traded with the natives: they bartered their cloaths and arms for paper chiefly, and behaved very friendly and honeſtly. But while ſome of them were below with Mr. Banks, one of the young ones who was upon the deck ſtole a half minute glaſs which was in the binnacle, and was detected juſt as he was carrying it off. Mr. Hicks, the commanding officer on board at that time, took it into his head to puniſh him, by giving him a dozen laſhes with a cat-o'nine-tails; and accordingly ordered him to be taken to the gang-way, and tied up to the ſhrouds. When the other Indians who were on board perceived this, they attempted to reſcue him; and being reſiſted, called for their arms, which were handed up from the canoes, and one of their people attempted to come up the ſhip's ſide. Mr. Banks hearing a buſtle, came haſtily upon the deck with Tupia to ſee what had happened. The Indians flew directly to Tupia, who, finding Mr. Hicks inexorable, could only aſſure them, that nothing was intended againſt the young man's life, but that it was neceſſary as an offender he ſhould be puniſhed, with which they ſeemed to be ſatisfied; as ſoon as the affair was explained, the puniſhment was then inflicted, and as ſoon as it was over, an old man among the ſpectators, who was imagined to be his father, gave him

Digitized by Google

a hearty beating, and ſent him down into his canoe. Upon which all the canoes dropped aſtern, and the Indians ſaid, that they were afraid to come near the ſhip any more; however, after much perſuaſion, they ventured back again, but they had no longer that cheerful confidence, and their ſtay was ſhort; indeed, they promiſed at their departure, to return with ſome fiſh, but they were ſeen no more.

In the evening of the 25th, ſeven large canoes came off to the ſhip with about two hundred men; ſome of them came on board, and expreſſed a knowledge of them.

On the 29th, near four hundred of the natives crouded about the ſhip in their canoes, and ſome of them were admitted on board: captain Cook gave one, who ſeemed to be a chief, a piece of broad cloth, and diſtributed ſome trifling preſents among the reſt. Some of theſe people had been about the ſhip when ſhe was off at ſea, and knew the power of our fire-arms, for when they ſaw a gun, it threw them into manifeſt confuſion: under this impreſſion they traded very fairly; but ſome of them in one of the canoes took an opportunity when the gentlemen and people of the ſhip were at dinner to tow away the buoy: a muſket was fired over them without effect, they then endeavoured to reach them with ſome ſmall ſhot, but they were out of reach: by this time they had got the buoy into their canoe, and captain Cook was obliged to fire a muſket at them with

ball,

Digitized by Google

ball, which hit one of them, and they immediately threw the buoy over board: a round shot was then discharged over them, which struck the water and went ashore. Some of them landed, who ran about the beach, as we imagined, in search of the ball. Tupia called to them, and assured them that they should be safe while they were honest, and with some persuasion, many of them returned to the ship, and behaved extremely well.

Captain Cook went with the pinnace and yawl, manned and armed, accompanied by Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander, and landed upon an island, which was about three quarters of a mile distant: the canoes, which were about the ship, did not follow them upon their leaving her, which was thought a good sign; but as soon as the gentlemen landed, they crouded to different parts of the island, and came on shore. Captain Cook and the gentlemen were in a little cove, and in a short time were surrounded by two or three hundred people, some coming from behind the heads of the cove, and others appearing on the tops of the hills: every man of them was armed, but coming on in so confused and straggling a manner, the gentlemen scarcely suspected they meant them any harm, and were determined that hostilities should not begin on their side. The company marched towards them, and then drew a line upon the sand between them and the ships company, which they were made to understand, was not to be passed by them; they continued quiet at

Digitized by Google

firſt, but their weapons were held ready to ſtrike, and they were rather irreſolute than peaceable. While captain Cook and his company were in this ſtate of ſuſpenſe, another party of Indians came up, and as their number increaſed, growing bolder, they began the uſual dance and ſong; however, they ſtill delayed the attack, but a party ran to each of our boats, and attempted to draw them upon land; this, with ſome of the people's preſſing in upon our line, ſeemed to be the ſignal: the ſituation of the gentlemen became now too critical for them to remain longer inactive, captain Cook therefore diſcharged his muſket, which was loaded with ſmall ſhot, at one of the forwardeſt, and Mr. Banks and two of captain Cook's men fired immediately after wards: this made them retreat a little in ſome confuſion, but one of the chiefs, who was at about twenty yards diſtance, rallied them, and running forward waving his patoo-patoo, called loudly to his companions, and led them to the charge. Dr. Solander then fired at this champion, who ſtopped ſhort upon feeling the ſhot, and immediately after ran away with the reſt: they did not upon this diſperſe, but got together upon a riſing ground, and wanted ſeemingly ſome leader of reſolution to renew their attack. As they were now beyond the reach of ſmall ſhot, the company fired with ball, but none of them taking place, they ſtill continued in a body, and in this ſituation captain Cook and company remained about a quarter of an hour: the ſhip in the mean while diſcovered

Digitized by Google

vered a greater number of Indians than the company could who was aſhore, and bringing her broad-ſide to bear, intirely diſperſed them, by firing a few ſhot over their heads, only two of the Indians were hurt with the ſmall ſhot in this ſkirmiſh, and not a ſingle man killed, which would not have been the caſe if captain Cook had not reſtrained his men, who were impatient to deſtroy them. When all was quiet, and the company was gathering celery, which grew here in great plenty, an old Indian, who proved to be the chief, that captain Cook had preſented with a piece of broad cloth in the morning, came out of a cave with his wife and his brother, and in a ſupplicating poſture put themſelves under their protection. They ſpoke kindly to them, and the old man then told the gentlemen that he had another brother, who was one of thoſe that had been wounded by the ſmall ſhot, and begged to know with great concern if he would die. Captain Cook aſſured him that he would not, and at the ſame time put into his hand both a muſket ball and ſome ſmall ſhot, deſcribing the different effects of each. After this they took courage, and ſat down by the gentlemen, and as tokens of their perfect amity, they made them preſents of ſuch trifles as captain Cook and the reſt happened to have about them.

They re-imbarked ſoon after in their boats, and having rowed to another cove in the ſame iſland, climbed a neighbouring hill, from which they had an extenſive view of the country.

The

Digitized by Google

The proſpect was very romantic and uncommon; it conſiſted of innumerable iſlands, which formed as many harbours, where the water was as ſmooth as a mill-pool: they alſo ſaw many towns, ſcattered houſes, and plantations, the country being much more populous than any they had ſeen. One of theſe towns was very near them, from which many of the natives advanced, taking great pains to ſhew the company that they were unarmed, and in their countenances and geſtures expreſſing great humility and meekneſs. In the interim ſome of the captain's people, who, when the Indians were to be puniſhed for a fraud, aſſumed the inexorable juſtice of a Lycurgus, took it into their heads to break into one of their plantations, and dig up ſome potatoes: for this offence captain Cook ordered each of them to be flogged, after which two of them were diſcharged; but the third, inſiſting that it was no crime for an Engliſhman to plunder an Indian plantation, though it was a crime in an Indian to defraud an Engliſhman of a nail, he was ordered back into his confinement, from which he was not releaſed till he had received ſix laſhes more.

On the 30th, there being a dead calm, and no probability of their getting to ſea, the captain ſent the maſter, with two boats to ſound the harbour; and all the forenoon had ſeveral canoes about the ſhip, who traded in a very fair and friendly manner. In the evening they went aſhore upon the main, where the people received them

Digitized by Google

them very cordially; but they found nothing worthy of notice.

In this bay they were detained by contrary winds and calms ſeveral days, during which time their intercourſe with the natives was continued in the moſt peaceable and friendly manner, they being frequently about the ſhip, and the gentlemen aſhore, both upon the iſlands and the main. In one of their viſits to the continent, an old man ſhewed them the inſtrument they uſe in ſtaining their bodies, which reſembled thoſe that were employed for the ſame purpoſe at Otaheite. They ſaw alſo the man who was wounded in attempting to ſteal their buoy: the ball had paſſed through the fleſhy part of his arm, and grazed his breaſt; he ſeemed to be in a fair way of getting over it. They ſaw alſo the brother of the old chief, who had been wounded with ſmall ſhot in their ſkirmiſh: the ſhot had ſtruck his thigh obliquely, and though ſeveral of them were ſtill in the fleſh, the wound ſeemed to be attended with neither danger nor pain. They found among their plantations the morus papyrifera, of which theſe people, as well as thoſe of Otaheite, make cloth; but the plant ſeems here to be rare, and they ſaw no pieces of the cloth large enough for any uſe but to wear by way of ornaments.

One day having landed in a very diſtant part of the bay, the natives all ran away, except one old man, who accompanied captain Cook

Digitized by Google

Cook and the reſt of the company, wherever they went, and ſeemed much pleaſed with the little preſents that were made him. They came at laſt to a little fort, built upon a rock, which at high water was ſurrounded by the ſea, and acceſſible by a ladder only: They perceived that this old man eyed them with a kind of reſtleſs ſolicitude as they approached it, and upon their expreſſing a deſire to enter it, he told them that his wife was there: he ſaw that their curioſity was rather encreaſed by this intelligence, and after ſome heſitation, he ſaid, if they would promiſe to offer no indecency, he would accompany them: this was readily agreed to and, they followed him. The ladder conſiſted of ſteps faſtened to a pole, but they found the aſcent both difficult and dangerous. When they entered they ſaw three women, who burſt into tears of terror and ſurprize, as ſoon as they ſaw the company: ſome kind words, and a few preſents, ſoon put them into good humour, and removed their apprehenſions. They examined this houſe, and by his intereſt two others, which were all that the fortification contained, and having diſtributed a few more preſents, they with mutual ſatisfaction parted.

At four o'clock in the morning of the 5th, of December, they weighed, with a light breeze, but it being variable with frequent calms, they made little way. They kept turning out of the bay till the afternoon, and about ten o'clock they were ſuddenly becalmed, ſo that the

Digitized by Google

the ſhip would neither wear nor ſtay, and the tide or current ſetting ſtrong, ſhe drove towards land ſo faſt, that before they could take neceſſary precautions for her ſecurity ſhe was within a cable's length of the breakers; and about an hour afterwards, juſt as the man in the chains had cried "ſeventeen fathom," the ſhip ſtruck. The ſhock threw the whole ſhip's company into the utmoſt conſternation; Mr. Banks, who was ſtepping into bed, ran haſtily up to the deck, and the man in the chains called out "five fathom;" by this time, the rock on which they had ſtruck being to windward, the ſhip went off without having received the leaſt damage, and they ſoon got into twenty fathom.

This rock lies half a mile W.N.W. of the northermoſt or outermoſt iſland on the ſouth-eaſt ſide of the bay. They had light airs from the land, with calms, till nine o'clock the next morning, when they got out of the bay, and a breeze ſpringing up at N. N. W. ſtood out at ſea.

This bay lies on the weſt ſide of Cape Bret, and the captain named it the Bay of Iſlands, from the great number of iſlands which line its ſhores, and form ſeveral harbours equally ſafe and commodious, where there is room and depth for any number of ſhipping. That in which they lay is on the ſouth weſt ſide of the ſouth weſtermoſt iſland, called Matuaro, on the

Digitized by Google

ſouth eaſt ſide of the bay. The Capt. made no accurate ſurvey of this bay, being diſcouraged by the time it would take up; he thought alſo that it was ſufficient to be able to affirm, that it afforded good anchorage, and refreſhment of every kind. It was not the ſeaſon for roots, but they had plenty of fiſh, moſt of which, however, they bought of the natives, for they could catch very little themſelves. When they ſhewed the natives their ſeine, which is ſuch as the King's ſhips are generally furniſhed with, it was laughed at, and in triumph their own was produced, which was indeed of an enormous ſize, and made of a kind of very ſtrong graſs; it was in depth five fathom, and by the room it took up, it could not be leſs than three or four hundred fathom in length. In this part of the country, fiſhing ſeems to be the chief employ of life: about all their towns a great number of nets, laid in heaps like hay-cocks, covered with a thatch to keep them from the weather, and they ſcarcely entered a houſe but they ſaw ſome of the people employed in making them. The fiſh they procured here were ſharks, ſting-rays, ſea-bream, mullet, mackrel, and ſome others.

The inhabitants in this bay are far more numerous than in any other part of the country that they had before viſited; it did not appear to them that they were united under one head, and though their towns were fortified, they ſeemed to live together in perfect amity.

It

Digitized by Google

It is high water in this bay at the full and change of the moon, about eight o'clock, and the tide then rises from six to eight feet perpendicularly. It appears, from such observations as captain Cook was able to make of the tides upon the sea coast, that the flood comes from the southward; and he had reason to think that there is a current which comes from the westward, and sets along the shore to the S. E. or S. S. E. as the land happens to lie.

On the 9th of December it fell calm, and several canoes came off to them, but the people having heard of their guns, it was very difficult to persuade them to come up to the ship; after having bought some of their cloaths, as well as their fish, they began to enquire into the state of their country, and being informed by Tupia, that, at the distance of three days rowing in their canoes, at a place called Moore-whennua, the land would take a short turn to the southward, and then extend no more to the west. It was concluded that this was the land discovered by Tasman, which he called Cape Maria van Diemen, and finding these people so intelligent, they made a farther inquiry, whether they knew of any country besides their own: their answer was, that they never had visited any other, but that their forefathers had told them, that to the N. W. by N. or N. N. W. there was a country of vast extent, called Ulimaroa, to which some people had sailed in an extraordinary large canoe; that some of them only returned, and reported,

Digitized by Google

that after a month's paſſage they had ſeen a country where hogs were eaten by the people. Tupia then aſked them whether theſe adventurers brought any hogs with them when they returned: they ſaid no: then Tupia told them that this ſtory muſt certainly be falſe, for it cannot be imagined, that men who came back from an expedition without hogs, had ever viſited a country where hogs were to be had. However, it is remarkable, notwithſtanding the ſhrewdneſs of Tupia's objection, that when they mentioned hogs it was by name, and not by deſcription, calling them Booah, the name by which they are called in the South-ſea iſlands; but if they had been wholly unacquainted with this animal, and had had no communication with people to whom it was known, they could not poſſibly have come at the name.

Nothing worthy obſervation happened till January the 15th, when they were about four long cannon ſhot diſtant from the village or heppah, from which four canoes immediately came off, as was imagined to reconnoitre, and if they ſhould find themſelves able, to take them. The men were all well armed, and dreſſed much like thoſe repreſented in the figure publiſhed by Taſman; two corners of the cloth, which was wrapped round the body, were paſſed over the ſhoulders from behind, and being brought down before to the upper edge of it, were made faſt to it juſt under the breaſt; but ſcarce any had feathers in their hair.

Digitized by Google

hair. They rowed round them several times, with their usual tokens of menace and defiance, and at last was begun the assault by throwing some stones: Tupia expostulated with them, but seemingly to very little purpose; and the gentlemen of the ship began to fear they would oblige them to fire at them, when a very old man in one of the boats expressed a desire of coming on board. They were glad to encourage him in his design, a rope was thrown into his canoe, and she was immediately alongside of the ship: the old man got up, and prepared to come up the ship's side, upon which his countrymen expostulated against the attempt with great vehemence, and at last laid hold of him, and held him back: however, he adhered to his purpose with a calm but steady perseverance, and as soon as he got loose he came on board. The ship's company received him with all possible expressions of kindness and friendship, and after some time, he was dismissed with several presents to his companions. As soon as he got on board his canoe, the people in all the rest began to dance, but whether this was a token of enmity or friendship, it was not certainly to be determined, for they had been seen to dance in a disposition both for peace and war. However, in a short time they retired to their fort, and soon after captain Cook went on shore with most of the gentlemen.

A fine stream of excellent water was found here, and wood in the greatest plenty, for the

Digitized by Google

land here was one foreſt, of vaſt extent. Having the ſeine with them they hauled it once or twice, and with great ſucceſs: for they caught near three hundred weight of fiſh of different ſorts, which the ſhip's company had diſtributed among them equally.

At day-break, on the 16th, three canoes came off to them with above a hundred men on board, beſides ſeveral of their women, which they were pleaſed to ſee, being in general a ſign of peace; but they became very troubleſome ſoon afterwards, and gave the gentlemen reaſon to apprehend ſome miſchief from them to the people that were in the ſhip's boats alongſide the veſſel. During this ſituation, the long-boat was ordered aſhore with ſome water caſks, and ſome of the canoes attempting to follow her, it was found neceſſary to intimidate them by firing ſome ſmall ſhot: they were at ſuch a diſtance that it was impoſſible to hurt them, yet this reproof had its effect, and they gave up the purſuit. Some fiſh, which they had in their canoes, they now offered to ſell, and which, though it ſtunk, was bought by the gentlemen: for this purpoſe a man in a ſmall boat was ſent among them, with whom they traded for ſome time very fairly. However, at length, one of them watching his opportunity, ſnatched at ſome paper which the ſhip's market-man held in his hand, and miſſing it, put himſelf immediately in a poſture of defence, flouriſhing his patoo-patoo, and appearing as if he was about to ſtrike; ſome ſmall

Digitized by Google

ſmall ſhot were then fired at him from the ſhip, a few of which ſtruck him upon the knee, which put an end to trade, but the Indians ſtill kept near the ſhip, rowing many times round her, and ſpeaking to Tupia, chiefly concerning the traditions they had among them in reſpect to the antiquities of their country. They were led to this ſubject by the enquiries which Tupia had been directed to make, whether they had ever ſeen ſuch a veſſel as the ſhip, or had ever heard that any ſuch had been upon their coaſt, to all which enquiries they anſwered in the negative, ſo that no memorial of Taſman has been preſerved among them by tradition; though by an obſervation made this day, captain Cook found that they were only fifteen miles ſouth of Murderer's bay, their latitude being 41° 5 32, and Murderer's bay, according to his account, being 40° 50.

The women in theſe canoes, as well as ſome of the men, had a head-dreſs which had not been ſeen before. It was a bunch of black feathers, made up in a round form, and tied upon the top of the head, which it quite covered, and made it appear twice as high as it was in reality.

On the 17th, the ſhip lay ſomewhat leſs than a quarter of a mile from the ſhore, and in the morning they were awakened by the ſinging of the birds, the number of which was incredible, and they ſeemed to ſtrain their throats in emulation of one another. This

wild

Digitized by Google

wild melody far exceeded any that they had ever heard of the ſame kind; it reſembled ſmall bells, moſt exquiſitely tuned, and perhaps the diſtance, and the water between, might be ſome advantage to the ſound. They were informed that the birds here always began to ſing about two hours after midnight, and like our nightingales continuing their muſick till ſun-riſe, were ſilent the reſt of the day.

After breakfaſt on the 18th, they went to take a view of the bay, the extent of which was very great, and in every direction, conſiſted of numberleſs ſmall harbours and coves. Their excurſion was confined to the weſtern ſide, and the country where they landed being an impenetrable foreſt, they could ſee nothing worthy of notice. However, they killed a good number of ſhaggs, which they ſaw ſitting upon their neſts in the trees, and which, whether roaſted or ſtewed, was conſidered as very good proviſion. Upon their return, they ſaw a ſingle man in a canoe fiſhing; they rowed up to him, and to their great ſurprize he took not the leaſt notice of them, but continued to follow his occupation, even when they were alongſide of him. He did not, however, appear to be either ſullen or ſtupid: he was deſired to draw up his net, that the company might examine it, and he readily complied: the form of it was circular, extended by two hoops, and about ſeven or eight feet in diameter: the top was open, and ſea-ears were faſtened to the bottom as a bait: this he lowered ſo as to lie upon

Digitized by Google

upon the ground, and when he thought fish enough were assembled over it, he drew it up by a very gentle and even motion, so that the fish rising with it, were scarcely sensible that they were lifted, till they came very near the surface of the water, and then by a sudden jerk were brought out in the net. He had caught by this simple method abundance of fish, and indeed they are so plenty here, that the catching them requires neither much art nor labour.

This day, some of their people in the skirts of the wood, near a hole or oven, found three human hip-bones, which they brought on board; a farther proof that these people eat human flesh: Mr. Monkhouse, the surgeon, also brought on board, the hair of a man's head, which he found near some deserted houses among other things, tied up to the branches of trees.

On the 22d Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander employed themselves in botanizing near the beach, captain Cook taking a seaman with him, ascended one of the hills: when he reached the summit, he found a view of the inlet intercepted by hills, which rose still higher in that direction, and which were rendered inaccessible by impenetrable woods; he however, was abundantly compensated for his labour, for he saw the sea on the eastern side of the country, and a passage on the west leading from it, a little to the eastward of the entrance of the

Digitized by Google

the inlet where the ship was. On the south east side of this inlet, where the main land lay, appeared to be a narrow ridge of very high hills, forming part of the south west side of the streight; on the opposite side the land appeared to trend away east as far as the eye could discern, and there appeared to the south-east, to be an opening to the sea, which washed the eastern coast: on the east side of the inlet also captain Cook saw some islands, which he had before taken to be part of the main land. Having discovered this, he descended the hill, and as soon as they could refresh themselves, they set out on their return to the vessel. In their way, the harbours and coves were examined which lie behind the islands that were discovered from the hill; and in this rout they saw an old village, where there were many houses that seemed to have been long deserted: they also discovered another village which was inhabited, but the day was too far spent for them to visit it, and therefore they made the best of their way to the ship, which between eight and nine o'clock at night they got on board.

On the 24th, they went to visit their friends at the hippah or village on the point of the island near the ship's station, who had come off to them when they first came into the bay. They were received with the utmost confidence and civility, every part of their habitations were shewn to them; they were commodious and neat. The island or rock on which this town

town is ſituated, is divided from the main by ſo narrow a breach or fiſſure, that a man might almoſt leap from one to the other: the ſides of it are every where ſo ſteep as to render the artificial fortification of theſe people almoſt unneceſſary: however, there was one ſlight palliſade, and one ſmall fighting-ſtage, towards that part of the rock which was moſt eaſy to acceſs.

Here the natives brought out ſeveral human bones, the fleſh of which they had eaten, and offered them to ſale; for the curioſity of the people on board, who had purchaſed them as memorials of the horrid practice, which many cannot believe notwithſtanding any reports, had rendered them a kind of article of trade. In one part of this village they ſaw, with great aſtoniſhment, a croſs exactly ſimilar to that of a crucifix; it was adorned with feathers, and upon enquiry for what purpoſe it had been ſet up, they were informed that it was a monument for a dead man: it was before underſtood that their dead were not buried, but thrown into the ſea; but when they enquired how the body of the man had been diſpoſed of, to whoſe memory this croſs had been erected, they were refuſed an anſwer.

Two poſts having been prepared by the carpenter to be left as memorials of their having viſited this place, captain Cook ordered them to be inſcribed with the ſhip's name, and the year and month; one of them he fixed at the watering-place, hoiſting the union flag upon

Digitized by Google

the top of it; and the other he carried over to the island that lies neareſt to the ſea, called by the natives Motuara. He went firſt to the village or hippah, accompanied by Mr. Monkhouſe and Tupia, where he met with the old man, and told him and ſeveral others, by means of Tupia, that they were come to ſet up a mark upon the iſland, in order to ſhow to any other ſhip which ſhould happen to come thither, that they had been there before. They readily conſented to this, and promiſed never to pull it down: captain Cook then gave ſomething to every one preſent; and to the old man he gave a ſilver threepence, dated 1736, and ſome ſpike nails, with the king's broad arrow cut deep upon them; things which I thought moſt likely to remain long among them: he then took the poſt to the higheſt part of the iſland, and after fixing it firmly in the ground, he hoiſted upon it the union-flag, and honoured this inlet by calling it Queen Charlotte's Sound; at the ſame time taking formal poſſeſſion of this and the adjacent country, in the name and for the uſe of his Majeſty King George the Third. They then drank a bottle of wine to her Majeſty's health, and gave the bottle to the old man who had accompanied them up the hill, and who was greatly pleaſed with his preſent.

While they were fixing the poſts, they enquired of the old man concerning the paſſage into the eaſtern ſea, the exiſtence of which he confirmed; and then aſked him about the land

land to the S. W. of the ſtreight, where they were then ſituated: he ſaid, this land conſiſted of two whennuas or iſlands, that might be circumnavigated in a few days, and which he called Tovy Poenammoo; the literal tranſlation of this word is, "the water of green talc:" and probably if they had underſtood him better, they would have found that Tovy Poenammoo was the name of ſome particular place where they got the green talc or ſtone, and not a general name for the whole ſouthern diſtrict: he ſaid, that on the eaſt ſide of the ſtreight there was alſo a third whennua, which would take up many moons in circumnavigating: this he called Eaheinomauwe; and he gave the name of Tiera Witte, to the land on the borders of the ſtreight. As ſoon as the poſt was ſet up, they returned on board the ſhip, and brought the old man with them, who was attended by his canoe, in which he returned home after dinner.

On the 5th, of February, being come to an anchor a little above Motuara, Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander went on ſhore, to ſee if any gleanings of natural knowlege remained, and by accident met with the moſt agreeable Indian family they had ſeen, which gave them a fairer opportunity of remarking the perſonal ſubordination among theſe people, than had before offered. The principal perſons were a widow, and a pretty boy about ten years of age: the widow was mourning for her huſband according to their cuſtom, with tears of blood, and the

Digitized by Google

child, by the death of its father, inherited the land where the gentlemen had cut their wood. The mother and the ſon were ſitting upon matts, and the reſt of the family, which conſiſted of ſixteen or ſeventeen in number of both ſexes, ſat round them in the open air, for they did not ſeem to have any houſe, or other ſhelter from the weather. Their behaviour was affable, obliging, and unſuſpicious; they offered each perſon ſome fiſh, and a brand of fire to dreſs it, and importuned them to ſtay till the morning, which they would certainly have done, if they had not expected the ſhip to ſail.

On the 6th, about ſix o'clock in the morning, a light breeze ſprung up at north, and they again got under ſail, but the wind proving variable, they reached no farther than juſt without Motuara; however, in the afternoon, a more ſteady gale at N. by W. ſet us clear of the Sound.

The entrance of Queen Charlotte's Sound is ſituated in latitude 41° S. longitude 184° 45′ W. and near the middle of the ſouth weſt ſide of the ſtreight in which it lies. The land of the ſouth eaſt head of the Sound, called by the natives Koamaroo, off which lie two ſmall iſlands and ſome rocks, makes the narroweſt part of the ſtreight. From the north weſt head a reef of rocks runs out about two miles, in the direction of N. E. by N. part of which is above the water, and part below. By this account of the heads, the Sound will be ſufficiently

Digitized by Google

ciently known: at the entrance, it is three leagues broad, and lies in S.W. by S.S.W. and W.S.W. at leaſt ten leagues, and is a collection of ſome of the fineſt harbours in the world, as will appear from a plan, which was taken with all the accuracy that time and circumſtances would admit. The land forming the harbour or cove in which they lay, is called by the natives Totarranue: the harbour itſelf, which captain Cook called Ship Cove, is equal to any in the Sound for ſafety or convenience: it lies on the weſt of the ſound, and is the ſouthernmoſt of three coves, that are ſituated within the iſland of Motuara, which bears eaſt of it. Ship Cove may be entered, either between Motuara and a long iſland, called by the natives Hamote, or between Motuara and the weſtern ſhore. In the laſt of theſe channels are two ledges of rocks, three fathom under water, which may eaſily be known by the ſea-weed that grows upon them. In ſailing either in or out of the Sound, with little wind, attention muſt be had to the tides, which flow about nine or ten o'clock at the full and change of the moon, and riſe and fall between ſeven and eight feet perpendicularly. The flood comes in through the ſtreight from the S.E. and ſets ſtrongly over upon the north weſt head, and the reef that lies off it: the ebb ſets with ſtill greater rapidity to the S.E. over upon the rocks and iſlands that lie off the ſouth eaſt head. The variation of the compaſs they found from good obſervation to be 13° 5′ E.

Digitized by Google

They could discern the land about this sound, at the distance of twenty leagues, it is of such a height; it consists of high hills and deep vallies, well stored with different sorts of excellent timber, fit for all purposes except masts, for which it is too heavy and hard. The sea abounds with a variety of fish, so that without going out of the cove where they lay, they caught daily a quantity sufficient to serve the whole ship's company: they found plenty of shags along the shore, besides some other species of wild-fowl, which was tolerable good food.

There are above four hundred inhabitants, and they live dispersed along the shores, where their food, consisting of fish and fern roots, is most easily come at; for they saw no cultivated ground. They retire to their hippahs, or forts, when there is any appearance of danger; in this situation they were found, and in this situation they remained for some time after the ship's arrival. They are poor comparatively with the inhabitants of other parts of this country, and their canoes are without ornament: the little traffic the gentlemen had with them was entirely for fish, and indeed they had hardly any thing else to dispose of. However, they seemed to have some knowledge of iron, which the inhabitants of some other parts had not; for they were glad of nails for their fish, and sometimes preferred it to every thing else that the gentlemen could offer, which had not always been the case. At first they were very fond of paper,

Digitized by Google

paper, but when they found that it was ſpoiled by being wet, they would not accept of it: they alſo ſet but little value upon the cloth of Otaheite, but Engliſh broad cloth, and red kerſey, they greatly eſteemed.

About three o'clock in the afternoon on the 8th, three canoes came up to the ſhip, in which were between thirty and forty people who had been for ſome time pulling after the ſhip with great labour and perſeverance: they ſeemed to be more cleanly, and a better claſs than uſual, and their canoes were diſtinguiſhed alſo by the ſame ornaments which had been ſeen upon the northerly part of the coaſt; with very little invitation they came on board, and their behaviour was friendly and courteous: upon their receiving preſents, they made preſents in return, which had not been done by any of the natives that the company had ſeen before. The gentlemen ſoon perceived that our gueſts had heard of them, for as ſoon as they came on board, they aſked for Whow, the name by which they called the nails: but though they had heard of nails, it was obvious they had ſeen none; for when they ſaw them, they aſked Tupia what they were. The term Whow, indeed, conveyed to them the idea only of their uſe, but not of their quality, for a tool commonly made of bone, which they uſe both as an augur and a chiſſel, is diſtinguiſhed in the ſame manner. It is alſo likely, that the little knowledge which the inhabitants of Queen Charlotte's Sound had of iron, they derived

Digitized by Google

from their neighbours at Tierawitte; for the gentlemen had no reaſon to think that the inhabitants of any part of this coaſt had the leaſt knowledge of iron or its uſe before they came among them, eſpecially as they ſeemed to diſregard it as of no value when it was firſt offered. After a ſhort time, the Indians went away, much gratified with the preſents that the gentlemen had made them; and captain Cook purſued his courſe along the ſhore to the N.E. till eleven o'clock the next morning.

Nothing very material happened from the 9th of December, to the 9th of February following; on this day they ſet ſail, and continued purſuing their courſe till towards evening, but a freſh breeze ariſing they were carried back to Cape Palliſer, between which and Cape Turnagain, the coaſt is rather flat and low. Cape Tierawitte is higher and forms table-points, and apparently alſo made two bays; but the diſtance would not admit them to judge with accuracy.

On the 13th, they were in the lat. of 42° 2′ S. off Cape Palliſer, the ſucceeding day they had run 21 leagues.

On Thurſday the 15th, they ſteered weſt, edging in for the high land that they were abreaſt of the preceding noon; and on Friday the 16th, they diſcovered land, bearing S. by W. which appeared to be an iſland. On Saturday the 17th this was confirmed, by their ſeeing part

Digitized by Google

part of the land of Tovy Poenammoo open to the weſtward of it, and which the captain named after Mr. Banks, by calling it Banks's iſland. This iſland is of a circular figure, twenty-four leagues in compaſs, and ſufficiently high to be perceived at twelve or fifteen leagues diſtance; it ſeems to be rather barren than otherwiſe, and has a broken irregular ſurface; it appeared to be inhabited from the ſmoke and ſome natives which they could diſcern.

Nothing appeared worth obſervation till Thurſday the 22d, when the weather clearing up after ſun-ſet, it having been hazey, they ſaw a mountain which roſe in a high peak, and the land which they could diſcern more diſtinctly than before, appeared lofty and mountainous. The accounts which the Indians had given in Queen Charlotte's Sound, they ſoon found not to be true; having told them that four days would be ſufficient to circumnavigate it.

On the 23d, they were becalmed, during which time Mr. Banks took the boat, and ſhot two Port Egmont hens, which reſembled thoſe that are to be found upon the iſland of Faro in ſuch numbers; theſe were the firſt of the kind that they had obſerved upon this coaſt, though ſome days before they made land, they perceived ſeveral.

The next day with a good wind they ſteered for the land, till it became hazey and dark, when being abreaſt of a high bluff point of land,

Digitized by Google

land, which was to the ſouthward, captain Cook named it Cape Saunders; about five miles diſtant, they brought to, and remained till morning in thirty fathom depth of water, the bottom of which conſiſted of ſmall pebbles.

On the 25th, being at a ſmall diſtance from ſhore, they could view it very diſtinctly, but could ſee no inhabitants; the ſurface is broken by many hills, which are green and woody, and is of a moderate height. The winds and calms were very variable, till the wind blew hard and fixt at W. S. W. when it put them paſt their top-ſails, and entirely demoliſhed their fore-ſail; as ſoon as they repaired the loſs, they continued to ſtand under two courſes to the ſouthward, and lay to under a fore-ſail, with their head to the ſouthward. At ſeven in the evening on the 27th, they made ſail under their courſes, and the next morning at eight the top-ſails cloſe reefed were ſet.

February the 4th, in ſounding with one hundred and fifty fathom, they could find no ground neither at night or in the morning; they ſteered for ſome land which they ſaw, and came within three or four miles of it before dark; on which they could perceive fires all night, and in the morning being, about three leagues from the ſhore, could diſcern it to be high and level,

The land here is high and barren, a few ſhrubs but no trees were to be ſeen: it is remarkable

Digitized by Google

markable for numerous white patches, which might be taken for marble, as the rays of the ſun are ſtrongly reflected by them. Many of the ſame kind have been ſeen in Mercury Bay, and in other parts of this country. The Capt. gave the name of South Cape to the point which lies in latitude 47° 19′ S. longitude 192° 12′ W. the weſtermoſt land is a ſmall iſland, which lies off the point of the main. As he imagined South Cape to be ſouth of the extreme part of this country, which it turned out to be, he was in hopes to get round it by the weſt, a large hollow ſwell from the ſouth weſt having convinced him of their being no land that way.

On the 13th, in ſteering N. E. by E. ½ E. they ſaw land bearing E. N. E. but could diſtinguiſh nothing upon it, the weather being ſo hazey. As ſoon as it cleared up, this land appeared to be high and mountainous, and diſcovering a bay, in which there appeared to be good anchorage, they hauled in for it, but finding the diſtance too great to run before dark with a hard blowing wind, they thought it ſafeſt to bear away along the ſhore.

This bay captain Cook called Duſky Bay, which lies in latitude 45° 47′ S. the entrance three or four miles in breadth and full as deep, the iſlands which it contains muſt be ſhelter from all winds, though the depth of water may not be ſufficient. There are five high peaked rocks which lie off it, and when it bears S. E. by S. they reſemble the four fingers and thumb of a man's

Digitized by Google

man's hand, which the capt. thought they juſtly called Point Five Fingers. The land of this point extends near two leagues to the northward, and is the only level land within a conſiderable diſtance: it is lofty and covered with wood; the land behind it conſiſts wholly of mountains, and is totally barren and rocky; which great difference makes the cape appear like an iſland.

On the 14th, after having paſt a ſmall opening in the land, which ſeemingly would have anſwered the purpoſe of a very good harbour, and being about a league and an half from the ſhore, in latitude 45° 13′ S. they ſounded, but found no bottom with ſeventy fathom. This opening, formed by an iſland, lying in the centre of the opening at eaſt, lies in latitude 45° 16′ S. behind which are mountains covered with ſnow, that ſeemed to have lately fallen; both from its appearance and the coldneſs of the weather. The perpendicular height of land on each ſide this opening prevents the wind from blowing any way but right in, or right out, and as the wind would not ſerve to come out above one day in a month, which Mr. Cook knew from experience, he thought it was beſt not to enter with his veſſel, though contrary to the opinion of ſome of the company, who adviſed it, for immediate ſafety.

However, as he could by no means be perſuaded to enter this opening, he judged it ſafeſt

to

to ſteer along the ſhore till evening, when the brought to. In the morning about four they ſtood in for the land, and as ſoon as day light they ſaw what appeared an inlet; which was nothing more than a deep valley between two high lands: ſo that they proceeded along ſhore in the ſame courſe, keeping between four and five miles diſtant off it.

On the 16th, about two, they paſſed the point, conſiſting of high red cliffs, which had been diſtant at noon ten miles, down which fell a caſcade of water in four ſmall ſtreams, which made Mr. Cook give it the name of Caſcade Point.

After having brought to with a fine ſandy bottom, and it being calm, they did not ſail till ten the next morning. Making along the ſhore, they obſerved the vallies and mountains covered with ſtone, which had fallen partly, as was ſuppoſed, in the night. The next day they were within three or four leagues of land, but it being foggy, nothing could be diſcovered diſtinctly, and there being much wind, with a great ſwell rolling in on ſhore, he thought it prudent to keep at ſome diſtance from it.

From the land being craggy and mountainous, there is reaſon to think the ſame ridge of mountains extends almoſt to the whole length of the iſland. Between the weſtermoſt and eaſtermoſt

Digitized by Google

eaſtermoſt land which they ſaw on the 13th, there is a ſpace of about ſix or eight leagues, the monntains of which they could diſcern, but not the coaſt. The coaſt near Cape Weſt, though low, riſes with a gradual aſcent to the foot of the mountains, and is covered with wood almoſt in every part. A narrow ridge of hills riſes directly from the ſea, from point Five-Fingers, down to lat. 44°. 20. and is covered with wood: behind which are mountains, which extend in another ſtupendous high ridge, and conſiſt of rocks totally barren and naked, except thoſe covered with ſnow, which is eaſily to be perceived, and perhaps lain there for many centuries. It is impoſſible to conceive a proſpect more craggy and deſolate than this country preſents from the ſea; for as far as the ſight can extend, nothing is viſible but ſummits of rocks, which ſtand ſo cloſe together, that only fiſſures are between them in lieu of vallies. Theſe mountains lie farther inland from latitude 44° 20′, to latitude 42° 8′, the ſea coaſt conſiſting of woody hills and vallies, of different extent as well as height, and ſeems very fertile, though it is imagined the ground is ſwampy in many places.

On the 27th in the morning they ſaw land bearing S. E. by E. and near it an iſland bearing E. S. E. about five leagues diſtant, which was the ſame Mr. Cook had ſeen from the entrance of Queen Charlotte's Sound, and from which this

Digitized by Google

this island bearing N. W. by N. is distant nine leagues.

Although they had circumnavigated the whole country, they could not leave it till they had repleniſhed thirty empty tons with water which they had on board; for which reaſon they hauled round the iſland, and entering a bay, between that and Charlotte's Sound, where three other iſlands lay cloſe under the weſtern ſhore, they came to an anchor about ſix in the evening, in eleven fathom, with a muddy bottom, and the next morning as ſoon as light they took a boat, and went on ſhore to look for a convenient place to take in water, which the captain found, every way to anſwer his wiſh, and accordingly he ſent proper perſons on ſhore, as ſoon as the ſhip was moored.

On the 30th when they had got their water on board, they warped the ſhip out of the cove, to have room to get under ſail; as ſoon as this was done, the captain took the pinnace and loſt no time in examining the bay; and having rowed about two leagues up it, he went on ſhore on the weſtern ſide, upon a point of land, and from an hill which he climbed, could perceive the weſtern arm of this bay run in S. W. by W. about five leagues farther, without being able to diſcover the end of it: he could ſee ſeveral other inlets, or ſmall bays, between the north weſt head of Queen Charlotte's Sound and where he was, making no doubt but there was anchorage and ſhelter in each of them, being all covered from

Digitized by Google

the sea wind with islands by which they are surrounded. As far as he could discern, the land about the bay was hilly, and covered chiefly with trees, shrubs, and fern, which makes it difficult and fatiguing for travellers. Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander, who were in this excursion, found several new plants. They saw no inhabitants, only some huts, which appeared to have been deserted for some time. The stones that lay upon the beach, were examined by Mr. Banks, and found to be full of veins, and seemed to be minerals, but nothing of ore belonging to them; though the bare rocks probably might have contained something more curious; but he had no opportunity of examining them. This gentleman was also of opinion that they had mistaken marble for a mineral substance in another place; and that, as the latitudes between this place and South America corresponded, there was a probability, upon a proper investigation, of making some very valuable discoveries.

In the evening, the ship being ready for sailing, the Capt. was determined to quit the country, and return home by the most advantageous route he could make for the service. Accordingly he took the opinion of his officers, and after some debates, on Saturday the 31st of March, 1770, he got under sail, and took his departure from the eastern point, which he called Cape Farewell. He also named the bay from which they came, Admiralty-Bay. The north-west point, he called Cape-Stevens, and the

Digitized by Google

the ſouth-eaſt, Cape-Jackſon, after the two ſecretaries to the board.

Admiralty-Bay may be known by the very high iſland, which is two miles N. E. of Cape Stevens in lat. 40° 37′ S. long. 185° 6′ W. A large deep bay is formed by means of the ſhore between this iſland and Cape-Farewell.

The manners and cuſtoms of the inhabitants of New Zealand, with the particulars of this country as far as they could learn, during their circumnavigation, will be the chief ſubject of the following pages.

Abel Janſen Taſman, a Dutch navigator, whoſe name has been mentioned in this narrative, was the firſt who diſcovered New Zealand, on the 13th of December, Ann. Dom. 1642. He entered, what is called in the chart, Cook's Streight; but the natives attacking him ſoon after he came to anchor, in Murderer's Bay as he named it, he could not go aſhore. From the name of Staaten Land, or the land of the States, which he called it, in honour of the States-General, it is known by the name of New Zealand in moſt of our maps and charts. This country was at one time thought to belong to the ſouthern continent, but now it is known to conſiſt of two large iſlands, divided by a ſtreight or paſſage from each other, about the breadth of four or five leagues.

Digitized by Google

By Mr. Green's ſeveral obſervations of the ſun and moon, and of the tranſits of Mercury, they are now found to be ſituated between the latitudes of 34° and 48° S, and between the longitude of 181° and 194° W.

Eaheinomauwe is the northermoſt of theſe iſlands, and Tovy, or Tavai Poenammoo the ſouthermoſt, both which being ſo called by the natives; but whether Tovy Poenammoo comprehends the whole ſouthern iſland, or only part of it, cannot be aſcertained. However, it is for the moſt part a mountainous, and apparently a barren country; and all the inhabitants that they could diſcover, were the people who came off to them under the ſnowy mountains, and thoſe they ſaw in Queen Charlotte's Sound,

The appearance of Eaheinomauwe is far ſuperior, though hilly and mountainous; it is covered with wood, and a rivulet of water runs through each valley. The ſoil here is ſo good, that in the opinion of Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander, as well as of ſeveral others on board, all kind of European grain, plants, and fruit, would thrive and flouriſh in the greateſt perfection. The vegetables found here, ſeemed to prove that the winters are milder than thoſe in England, and the ſummer more equally warm, and not hotter; from which we may infer that if people from Europe, were to ſettle here, they might with a little induſtry ſoon be

Digitized by Google

be abundantly ſupplied with all the neceſſaries and luxuries of life.

In reſpect to quadrupeds, they ſaw no other but dogs and rats, and very few of the latter. The people breed the dogs for no other purpoſe than to eat. As they ſaw no other quadrupeds, nor even the ſkins of any, it is to be concluded they have none, their greateſt pride being to decorate themſelves with the ſkins and hair of beaſts they have. Upon the coaſt, indeed, they ſaw ſeals, and once perceived a lion, but it is thought they ſeldom catch them, as they ſaw none of their ſkins, although ſome of their teeth were worn by way of ornament, and greatly eſteemed. They judged in the ſame manner of the whales, who are alſo upon this coaſt, for though they could not take them nor kill them for want of art or inſtrument, they ſaw patoo-patoos, made of the bone of the whale, or of ſome other animal whoſe bone reſembles it.

There are few ſpecies of birds, none of which are the ſame with thoſe of Europe, except perhaps the gannet. The ducks and ſhags indeed, if not too nicely examined, reſemble thoſe of Europe. The hawks, owls, and quails, which are here, differ but little at firſt ſight from thoſe of Europe, and ſeveral of the ſmall birds are more remarkable for their melodious ſong than any they had heard before.

A number of oceanic birds viſit the ſea coaſt, ſuch as albatroſſes, ſheerwaters, pinta-

Digitized by Google

dos, and ſome penguins, as Sir John Narborough calls them, or what the French call nuance, a ſpecies between bird and fiſh; their feathers upon their wings reſemble ſcales; and their wings, which help them to dive, and are uſed for nothing elſe, and not to accelerate their motion even upon the ſurface of the water, might properly be called fins.

They have but few inſects, and thoſe conſiſt of butterflies, beetles, fleſh flies, which are like thoſe in Europe, and ſome muſquitos and ſand flies, the ſame as thoſe of North America; but the latter were neither very troubleſome nor numerous.

As to their fiſh, they have them in great quantities, as wholeſome and delicious as thoſe of Europe. When the water permitted, they took with hook and line, eſpecially to the ſouthward, a ſufficient quantity for the whole ſhip's company; and the ſeine ſtill produced a greater ſupply, both for the preſent uſe and for ſalting. The variety was alſo very great, amongſt which they had ſeveral kinds of mackerel, ſome of them like thoſe we have in England; theſe the natives took in their ſeines by ſhoals, and ſold them for little or nothing. But the moſt luxurious fiſh was the lobſter or ſea cray fiſh, which are probably the ſame found at the iſland of Juan Fernandes, and mentioned in Lord Anſon's Voyage. They are different from ours in England, having a greater number of prickles on their backs,

Digitized by Google

backs, and when firſt taken out of the water they are red. The natives find them out with their feet, and catch them near the ſhore by diving. Another coarſe fiſh they alſo had which Frezier mentions in his voyage to South America, and calls elefant pejegallo, or poiſon coq. The ſkate, or ſting-ray, which they have here, are coarſer ſtill than the elefant; but a particular kind of ſpotted dog-fiſh was equal in flavour to our beſt ſkate. They had alſo flat-fiſh like our ſoles and flounders, and eels of different kinds, with variety of ſhell-fiſh.

Their vegetable productions conſiſt of very large timber trees fit for any kind of purpoſe except maſts, being too hard as well as heavy for that uſe. They ſaw a particular kind upon the coaſt, which had a ſcarlet flower, the wood of which is exceedingly hard and heavy, and fit for the uſe of mill-wrights. Another ſort grows in the ſwamps, of a very tough grain, reſembling the pitch-pine, with a leaf like a yew, and when lightened by tapping, would make the fineſt maſts in the world.

The verdure with which this country in moſt parts is covered is remarkable, and the variety of plants wonderful, though ſo few have hitherto been deſcribed by any botaniſts.

There are but few vegetables fit to eat, thoſe who had been long at ſea, feaſted upon wild celery,

Digitized by Google

celery, and a kind of creſſes, which they found in plenty. A plant reſembling what we call lambs quarters, or fat-hen, they boiled inſtead of greens; but once having the good fortune to find a cabbage tree, they regaled themſelves to their wiſh. There are plantations of yams and ſweet potatoes conſiſting of many acres, beſides cocoes. The fruit of the gourds, which are alſo cultivated here, ſerve the natives for veſſels for different uſes. The Chineſe paper mulberry tree they alſo diſcovered here, which ſerves the inhabitants of the South Sea iſlands to make cloth; but the ſcarcity of it is ſo great, that they wear it only as an ornament in their ears.

There is a plant that they uſe inſtead of hemp or flax, far ſuperior to any in other countries applied to the ſame purpoſe. There are two ſorts of this plant; the leaves of both are like flags, the flowers of the one are yellow, and of the other they are red. They make all their common apparel of the leaves of theſe plants, as well as their ſtrings, lines and cordage, being much ſtronger than thoſe we make of hemp. By a different preparation of this plant, they draw long ſlender fibres which reſemble ſilk, and are perfectly white: of theſe, the finer clothes are made, and they are remarkably ſtrong; they make their fiſhing nets of the leaves by ſplitting them and tying the ſtrips together.

As

As to metals they had not knowledge sufficient of the country to form a proper judgment. They found a large quantity of iron sand in Mercury Bay, for which reason iron ore is no doubt to be found not far from thence.

Upon their first arrival here, they thought it much better peopled than it was, imagining that the inland parts were populous, as they saw smoke so far from the shore; and perhaps behind Poverty Bay, and the Bay of Plenty, this may really be the case, the inhabitants appearing more numerous there than in other places: however, upon the whole the inhabitants are no way in proportion to the extent of land.

The men in general are as tall as any in Europe: they are robust; but neither fat nor lazy, like the inhabitants of the islands in the South-Seas: they are extremely vigorous and active; and they could perceive an uncommon degree of adroitness in every thing they attempted. They are of a brown complexion, but few exceed that of a Spaniard who has been tanned by the sun. The women are rather masculine in their appearance, but have a remarkable soft voice, by which they are chiefly distinguished: however, like their sex in other countries, they have a greater flow of spirits than the men. The males have black hair, and black beards; their teeth are very regular, and extremely white; they have good features, and seem healthy, many of both sexes live to a great

Digitized by Google

great age. These people seemed of mild dispositions, and they behave as such to each other; but towards their enemies they are implacable, giving them no quarter. It seems rather strange at first, that these people should so often wage war with each other, when so little is to be got by it; but when we consider that their principal food is fish, and that sufficient quantities are to be had only at certain times upon the coast, and that from these circumstances many are often reduced almost to a state of famine, we cannot be so much surprized at their frequent combats, any more than we can at their eating those who are killed in battle.

Let the real cause of their quarrels be what it will, when the captain's superiority was not known to them, they were always disposed to be the aggressors. Having no idea of any thing but numbers, when the majority was on their side, they construed all kind expressions into fear and cunning, made use of for self-security; but after having forced him to use fire-arms, which convinced them of his power, and seeing these dreadful weapons used only in his defence, they became friendly, and even affectionate, confiding in him, and striving to make him do the same in them; and when once they came to a right understanding with each other, he very rarely found them dishoneſt. Indeed while the natives looked upon the ship's company as enemies, when they had received the price of any commodity they had offered

Digitized by Google

offered to ſale, they did not ſcruple to pack up both the purchaſe and the money, and go off with them; thinking they had ſerved them in their own way.

The idea of indecency ſeemed to be unknown amongſt the people in the South-Seas, but the caſe was very different here; their carriage and converſation were modeſt, and decorum was preſerved with reſpect to actions equal to the politeſt people in Europe. The terms and manner of gaining acceſs to the women, were by a preſent, and decent behaviour; and in ſuch a caſe, they were totally innocent of its being any crime, eſpecially when they had obtained the conſent of their friends.

They are not equal to the people at Otaheite in perſonal cleanlineſs, for this reaſon, the climate being colder, they go ſeldomer into the water. Then the oil with which they anoint their hair being made with the fat of fiſh or of birds, and ſometimes not freſh, cauſes them to ſmell like Hottentots, and renders them altogether ry diſguſting. Their heads are not free from vermin, though they uſe combs made of wood and bone, and ſtick them ſometimes upright in the hair by the way of ornament, not unlike the faſhion of our Engliſh ladies. The men's beards are cut ſhort, their hair tied in a bunch upon the crown of the head, and decorated with feathers of various birds, and fixt in different forms as their fancy prompts them. The women's

Digitized by Google

men's hair is ſometimes worn ſhort, and at other times flowing upon their ſhoulders.

Both ſexes mark their bodies with black ſtains called Amoco, uſing the ſame method as they do at Otaheite, and call it tattowing; the men are marked more than the women. In general, the women ſtain only their lips, though they are marked ſometimes on other parts with ſmall black patches: but the men add ſomething annually to their ornaments, ſo that ſome of the elderly men were covered almoſt from head to foot. They have other marks, which are furrows about a line deep, and as much broad, like thoſe of the bark of a tree cut through, after a year's growth: after which being indented, and very black, they appear frightful. The older they are, the more marks they have. The very young men, only black their lips, as the women do; when ſomewhat older, they generally put a black patch on one cheek, and another over an eye, encreaſing theſe ornaments as they grow in years. All the marks are curiouſly impreſſed, and drawn with great nicety; thoſe on the body reſemble fillagree work: the quantity and form of theſe marks differed, according to the different parts of the coaſt. Their ſkins are painted as well as dyed, ſmearing themſelves with red oker, and often rubbing it on with oil, which remains wet, and liable to be rubbed off with the leaſt touch, by which means they could often diſcover when their people had been happy in the embraces of the females.

Digitized by Google

Their dreſs appears at firſt ſight to a ſtranger very uncouth, being made of the flag-leaves, which have been already taken notice of in the vegetable productions of this place, and interwoven with each other in ſuch a manner, as to reſemble a ſtuff between netting and cloth; the ends hanging out on the upper ſide like our ſhag matts. Two pieces of this ſtuff is ſufficient for a complete dreſs; one of them ſerves for an upper garment, and the other for the lower one, which reaches the ground, and only is worn by the men occaſionally. They wear a belt, to which they faſten a ſtring, for a purpoſe no one could imagine; and that is, to tye the prepuce over the glands of the penis, that it might not be drawn back by contraction; in this they differ from the inhabitants of the South-Seas, who ſlit up their prepuce for the contrary effect. Indeed, the glands ſeemed to be the only part about them which they are deſirous to conceal; they keep the belt and ſtring on when they ſtrip themſelves; and when they have been deſired to untie the ſtring, it was with the greateſt reluctance, ſhewing at the ſame time the greateſt ſigns of ſhame and confuſion.

They have two ſorts of cloth, beſides this coarſe ſhag, which have an even ſurface; it is made in the ſame manner as that which the inhabitants of South-America manufacture. One ſort reſembles our coarſeſt canvas; but it is infinitely ſtronger: the other is made ſo as to reſemble the round pieces of cane matting

Digitized by Google

which we put under dishes. This looks very pretty, being generally striped, and shines like silk; they make it in a sort of frame, about five feet long, and four broad; and seems to be a very tedious work. They work borders to both these kinds of cloth with a remarkable neatness, which is astonishing considering they have no needles. What they pride themselves the most in, is the fur of their dogs, of which they are very saving, which shews that the dogs are scarce. Some adorn themselves with feathers: one was seen intirely covered with the parrots red feathers.

Contrary to custom the females in general seemed to affect dress less than the men; their garments were the same as those of the men; the lower one was always bound fast round them, unless when they went into the water to catch lobsters, upon which occasion they always avoided the men. However, one day as they were landing upon a small island in Tolaga Bay, they surprized some of them at this work; and Diana herself with her nymphs could not have been more confused and distressed at the approach of Actæon, than they were as soon as they saw the people.

The ears of both sexes are bored, and stretched to such a degree, that a finger at least might be put through the holes of them. They wear all kinds of ornaments in their ears, such as cloth, feathers, bones of large birds, &c. but particularly the nails which they received.

Orna-

Digitized by Google

Ornaments are alſo ſuſpended to their ears by ſtrings; ſuch as chiſſels, bodkins made of green talc, nails, and teeth of deceaſed relations, the teeth of dogs, and every other kind of thing they think either valuable or curious. The females alſo wear bracelets and anclets, made of bones, ſhells, &c.

Their houſes, except in ſize, reſemble an Engliſh dog-kennel; they are ſeldom above eighteen or twenty feet in length, eight or ten in breadth, and five or ſix in height. They have wood framings made of ſlender ſticks, and the walls and roof conſiſt of hay very tightly put together; the bark of trees forms their linings and makes them very comfortable in cold weather. The roof is like thoſe of our barns, and the door is juſt high enough for a man to creep in upon his hands and knees: cloſe to the door is a ſquare hole, which lets out the ſmoke, and at the ſame time ſerves for a window. A plank is fixed in ſome conſpicuous part covered with ſome kind of carving, which they value as we do a picture. The ſide-walls and roof project and form a kind of porch, wherein there are benches for the family to ſit on. The fire-place is encloſed by either wood or ſtone; and the floor is thickly covered with ſtraw, for the family to ſleep on.

Very few articles make up their furniture and implements, one cheſt containing them all, except proviſion baſkets, gourds to hold water,

Digitized by Google

and the hammers uſed to beat their fern-root, which generally ſtand without the door: the reſt of their treaſure conſiſts in ſome rude tools, their apparel, arms, and the ornaments of their hair.

There are ſome ſuperior to the reſt and have large families who occupy houſes ſomewhat larger. Being on ſhore in the diſtrict called Tolaga, they ſaw the frame of a houſe, which had never been finiſhed, much larger than any that they had ſeen elſewhere, being thirty feet in length, fifteen in breadth, and twelve high: the carving and workmanſhip was much ſuperior to any they had met with in the country, but they could not find out for what purpoſe it was built.

Their food in general has been already mentioned. The roots of fern which grows upon the hills ſerve them for bread, which is almoſt the ſame with what our high commons produce in England, and is what we call fern, bracken, or brakes; and penguins and albatroſſes, with a few other ſpecies of birds before ſpoken of, often ſerve them for a feaſt.

They are under a neceſſity to bake and roaſt their meats, having no utenſils in which they can boil water. They have the ſame manner of baking as the inhabitants of the South Seas, and they roaſt with a long ſkewer or ſpit to which

Digitized by Google

which the flesh is fastened, it is placed sloping towards the fire, one stone is put at the bottom and near the middle, another supports it, which can be moved at a greater or less distance from the end, so that they can increase or diminish the degrees of obliquity as they think proper.

They have no opportunity of intoxicating themselves, as their universal drink is water, and in this respect they are happier than the rest of mankind, besides the perfect and uninterrupted health which they enjoy, resulting from it. In the course of frequent visits to their towns, and although they saw numbers of all ages, both men and women, they never perceived one who seemed to be afflicted with any disease, and on those they saw naked, never could discern the slightest eruption upon the skin, nor even the marks remaining of any which had been there.

As a farther proof of what has been already said in respect to their health, they saw a great number of old men, who, from the loss of their hair and teeth, had a very ancient aspect; none of them were decrepit, and though perhaps not so strong or muscular as those who were young, yet in cheerfulness and vivacity they were equal to any.

As to the genius of these people, it shews itself in nothing more than in the construction of their canoes: they resemble a New-England whale

Digitized by Google

boat, being long and narrow; the larger ſort appear to be built chiefly for war, and can carry from forty to eighty, or a hundred men armed; one lay aſhore at Tolaga, which was found to meaſure ſixty-eight feet and an half in length, five feet in breadth, and three feet and an half in depth; the bottom was ſharp, with ſtraight ſides reſembling a wedge; it conſiſted of three lengths, hollowed out to about an inch and an half or two inches thick, and well ſecured together with ſtrong plaiting: each ſide was made of one intire plank, ſixty-three feet in length, ten or twelve inches broad, and about an inch and quarter thick; theſe were fitted and laſhed with great ſkill to the part which formed the bottom. A great number of thwarts were laid from gunwale to gunwale, and laſhed on each ſide, to ſtrengthen the boat. The ornament at the head projected conſiderably beyond the body, and was in height about four feet and an half; the ornament at the ſtern was fixed as the ſtern-poſt of a ſhip is upon her keel, and was in height about fourteen feet, two feet in breadth, and an inch and a half thick, both conſiſting of carved work on boards, badly executed, but with ſome deſign. Their canoes in general, are built after this plan, and not leſs than twenty feet long: the ſmaller ſort, here and there, have outriggers, and now and then two of them are joined together. The ornaments of the ſmaller boats, which ſeem to be meant entirely for fiſhing, are figures of men, with very ugly faces and large tongues hanging out of their

Digitized by Google

their mouths, with ſea-ears ſtuck in for eyes. But their ſuperior kind of canoes, which may be called their men of war, are ſuperbly adorned with open work, and covered with black feathers, imitating looſe fringes, both which make a noble appearance: the carving of the gunwale boards were in a groteſque taſte, and adorned with tufts of white feathers fixt upon a black ground.

The paddles are neatly made and light; the blade in ſhape is oval, reſembling that of a large leaf, and they are about ſix feet in length.

They are not expert in ſailing, going always before the wind; the ſail is made of netting or matt, which is fixt between two poles that are erected upon each gunwale, and ſerve equally for maſts as yards: two ropes are uſed for ſheets, and were therefore faſtened to the top of each pole. Though this method may ſeem inconvenient, they make good way before the wind, and two men have each a paddle with which they ſteer.

Their tools are adzes, axes, and chiſſels, which ſerve them alſo for boring of holes: their adzes and axes are made of a hard black ſtone, or of a green talc, for want of metal; they uſe inſtead of chiſſels, human bone, or ſmall fragments of jaſpar, which they chip off from a block. They value their axes above all that they poſſeſs, and the gentlemen never could get one from them for any conſideration. They refuſed one of

Digitized by Google

of the beſt axes the captain had in the ſhip, beſides other things, for one of them, but it was not to be purchaſed.

Their fiſhing-nets, particularly the ſeine, is of an enormous ſize: one of them appears to be the workmanſhip of a number of hands, and ſeems to belong to the whole town: their other nets are circular, and extended by two or three hoops. The hooks they make uſe of are of bone or ſhell, but badly made in general. The baſkets in which they put the fiſh when caught, and thoſe which contain their proviſions, are made of wicker work of different kinds and dimenſions.

As to their tillage, they excel in it, which is not to be ſurprized at, as the perſon that ſows is to reap the benefit, and as there is ſcarce any thing elſe fit to eat. The gentlemen had no opportunity of ſeeing them plough or ſow, but they ſaw what they uſe at once for ſpade and plough: and this is nothing elſe but a long ſtake ſharpened at one end, with a ſhort piece fixed acroſs a little above it, which they can, by this means, force down with the foot with eaſe, and turn up ſix or ſeven acres of ground, owing in a great meaſure to the ſoil being ſandy and light.

They have ſpears, darts, battle-axes, and the patoo-patoo for their weapons. The ſpear is fourteen or fifteen feet in length, both ends pointed, and ſome have bone heads. They hold them

Digitized by Google

them by the middle, and by balancing them, they can push in such a manner as to be more difficult to parry than any weapon held by the end. The dart they throw with their hand as well as they do stones; either of which they seldom use but in defending their forts. They fight their battles in general hand to hand, whether in boats or on shore, which causes the slaughter to be great, for if the first blow takes place with any of their weapons it is all over. Their patoo-patoo, is what they depend most upon; it is strapped to their wrists for security, and worn by the principal people in their girdles as a military ornament. Besides these weapons, the chiefs carry a staff of distinction, as our officers do the spontoon; which was generally a whales rib perpectly white, with carved work, dog's hair, and feathers by way of ornament: sometimes a stick, about six feet long, also decorated and inlaid with a shell resembling mother-of-pearl. This was a mark of distinction with the elderly ones, who were more than the rest marked with the amoco.

When they came to attack the ship, one or more with these staffs or sticks appeared in each canoe, according to its size; and as soon as they were within a cable's length, they arose, changed their dress to that of dog's skin, and held out their staffs, by way of giving the word of command. Presuming that the ship could not reach them with any weapon, and being too far off

it

it to be reached with either lance or ſtone, they then bid it defiance in ſaying theſe words, which were generally the ſame, haromai, haromai, harre uta a patoo-patoo oge: "come to us, come on ſhore, and we will kill you all with our patoo-patoos." During this time they approached the ſhip, till they came cloſe alongſide; ſometimes ſoftening their tone of voice, and reſolving any queſtion that was aſked them. But the company's apparent timidity, encouraging them, they would break out afreſh with their menaces, and begin their war-ſong and dance, which was always the prelude to an attack, that often continued till it was found neceſſary to quell them by firing ſome ſmall-ſhot; however, ſometimes it ended after a few ſtones were thrown on board, as an inſult offered to the people on board, which they dared not to revenge.

Their war-dance conſiſts of variety of violent motions, contortions of the limbs, and grimaces; at the ſame time brandiſhing their ſpears, ſhaking their darts, and flouriſhing their patoo-patoos. They always have a ſong to this dance, which is rather wild indeed, but not diſagreeable, every ſtrain ending in concert with a loud and deep ſigh; there is a ſtrength, firmneſs, and agility in their manner of dancing, which ſtruck the company with admiration; their keeping time with exactneſs, was proved, by ſtriking at once above an hundred paddles againſt the ſides of their boats between the diviſions, ſo as to produce one ſound only.

They

Digitized by Google

They ſometimes ſing without dancing, as a peaceable amuſement, and they have other ſongs which the women ſing, who have remarkable mellow and ſoft voices, which have a pleaſing effect; they ſing in chorus and in parts, with more taſte than could be expected among ſuch ignorant ſavages.

Their inſtruments conſiſt of the ſhell, called the triton's trumpet, the noiſe of which is not unlike that of a cow's horn when blown into, and a ſmall wooden pipe, like a very ſmall nine-pin, in which there is no more muſic than in a pea-whiſtle. They are conſcious of theſe being of no uſe in muſic, for they never attempt to ſing to them.

They ſaw no towns or hippahs about Poverty Bay, Tegadoo, and Tolaga, only ſingle houſes here and there; but there were long ſtages on which lay ſtones and darts, by way of retreats at the laſt extremity for the people, as they would fight on theſe ſtages to a great advantage. The forts themſelves ſeem calculated only for the poſſeſſors to repreſs a ſudden attack, having no ſupply of water at hand, it is therefore impoſſible to ſuſtain a ſiege. They contain fern-root and dry-fiſh, laid up againſt ſeaſons of ſcarcity. Water might be got from the ſide of the hill by ſtealth, when fern-root and fiſh could not.

The people in this diſtrict were more numerous, and ſeemed to live in greater ſecurity from

Digitized by Google

from the above advantages; they had more plantations, and their canoes were more magnificent. The peace and plenty which seemed here to reign, might probably be owing to their being united under the same chief or king; being told by the inhabitants that they were the subjects of Terata. The residence of this prince they found afterwards to be the Bay of Plenty.

They were obliged to quit this country without being further acquainted with this prince; from Cape Kidnappers northward to the Bay of Plenty westward he was acknowledged, which is above eighty leagues coastways; and perhaps his dominions might still be of a greater extent.

Several subordinate chiefs in this prince's dominions, were shewn extraordinary respect, and were judged to administer justice; for when they made their complaint to them of having been robbed by a man who came on board the ship with him, he chastised him by kicking and beating him, which was by the delinquent received as from a man of authority, and which it seemed he had no right to resent. How they possess this authority they could not learn; but they observed that these chiefs were elderly men. However, they were informed in other parts that their authority came by inheritance.

Their clothes, which were very fine, and probably the spoils of war, were deposited in a small

Digitized by Google

ſmall hut, erected in the middle of the town, for that purpoſe. The females here have not that reſpect ſhewn them as they have in the South Sea iſlands, which Tupia complained of, and thought was an indignity to the ſex.

The men and women eat together, but how they manage their work they could not poſitively ſay. It is ſuppoſed that the men till the ground, make nets, catch birds and fiſh; and that the other ſex dig up fern roots, collect lobſters and other ſhell fiſh cloſe to the beach, dreſs their victuals, and weave cloth: theſe were their employments when they ſaw the natives, but that was ſeldom; for they uſually made a holiday when they were ſeen among the Engliſh; the inhabitants of all ages flocking round them, either to buy their valuable merchandize, which conſiſted of nails, paper, or broken glaſs, or through curioſity.

They could not learn much of their religion, but they found that the natives acknowledged the influence of ſuperior beings, one of whom is ſupreme, and the reſt ſubordinate; and their account of the beginning of the world, and the origins of man was the ſame with that of their friends in Otaheite. The knowledge of theſe ſubjects was more deeply impreſſed in Tupia than in any of their people; and whenever he thought proper to give them any inſtructions, a numerous audience gathered around him, and liſtened with the utmoſt attention, although he was very deficient in point of his diſcourſe.

Digitized by Google

Their manner of worſhipping their deities they could not comprehend; they could perceive no place of public worſhip, as the Morais of the South Sea Iſlands; but cloſe to a plantation of ſweet potatoes, they ſaw a ſmall ſquare area, ſurrounded with ſtones, in the centre of which was ſet up a ſharpened ſtake, upon which a baſket of fern roots was hung; and they were told that it was an offering to the gods, through the influence of which the owner hoped to have a plentiful crop.

The accounts that they received concerning the manner of diſpoſing of their dead by no means agreed. They heard that they buried them in the ground in the northern parts, and that they threw them into the ſea in the ſouthern. However, no graves were to be ſeen in the country, and they ſeemed to be very myſterious in concealing every thing relating to their dead. The living are the monuments of the dead, wounding themſelves as a teſtimony of bewailing the loſs of a relation or friend, the ſcars of which were ſeen on the bodies of almoſt every one of both ſexes. The croſs that was ſet up near Queen Charlotte's Sound, was the only monument they ſaw of any other kind.

The inhabitants of the South Sea Iſlands as well as the people of New Zealand have both an hiſtorical account of their anceſtors, which proves that they came from another country at a very diſtant period of time; and by what may

Digitized by Google

may be learnt from the tradition of both, the name of that country was Heawije; but the language being so much alike seems to put the matter entirely out of doubt. The following is a specimen of the similitude of words between the language of New Zealand, which consists of a northern and southern dialect, and that of Otaheite, and by which it is plain that the languages of these different places resemble each other in a very great degree.

ENGLISH.	NEW ZEALAND.		OTAHEITE.
	Northern.	*Southern.*	
A chief	Eareete	Eareete	Earee
A man	Taata	Taata	Taata
A woman	Whahine	Whahine	Iwahine
The head	Eupo	Heaowpoho	Eupo
The hair	Macauwe	Heoo-oo	Reouroa
The ear	Terringa	Hetaheyei	Terrea
The forehead	Erai	Heai	Erai
The eyes	Mata	Hemata	Mata
The cheeks	Paparinga	Hepapaca	Paparea
The nose	Ahewh	Heeih	Ahew
The mouth	Hangeutou	Hegaowai	Outou
The chin	Ecouwai	Hakaoewai	
The arm	Harimgariagu		Rema
The finger	Maticara	Hermaigawh	Mancow
The belly	Ateraboo		Oboo
The navel	Apeto	Heeapeto	Peto
Come hither	Haromai	Heromai	Harromai
Fish	Heica	Heica	Eyea
A lobster	Kooura	Kooura	Tooura
Cocoa	Taro	Taro	Taro
Sweet potatoes	Cumala	Cumala	Cumala
Yams	Tuphwhe	Tuphwhe	Tuphwhe
Birds	Mannu	Mannu	Mannu
No	Kaoura	Kaoura	Oure

Digitized by Google

One	Tahai		Tahai
Two	Rua		Rua
Three	Torou		Torou
Four	Ha		Haa
Five	Rema		Rema
Six	Ono		Ono
Seven	Etu		Hetu
Eight	Warou		Warou
Nine	Iva		Heva
Ten	Angahourou		Ahourou
The teeth	Hennihew	Heneahe	Nihio
The wind	Mehow		Mattai
A thief	Amooroo		Teto
To examine	Matakétake		Matáitai
To sing	Eheara		Heiva
Bad	Keno	Keno	Eno
Trees	Eratou	Eratou	Eraou
Grandfather	Toubouna	Toubouna	Toubouna
What do you call this & that	Owy Terra		Owy Terra

It appears clearly by the above ſpecimen, that the New Zealand and the Otaheite language are radically all one. As to the language of the northern and ſouthern parts of New Zealand it chiefly differs in pronunciation, as the ſame Engliſh word may do in different counties in England; and as the ſame perſon did not write down the ſouthern and northern words, it is poſſible that one might uſe more letters than the other, in order to produce the ſame ſound.

Thoſe navigators whoſe authority is made uſe of, to maintain that there is a ſouthern continent, are Taſman, Juan Fernandes, Hermite, the Dutch com-

Digitized by Google

commander Quiros, and Roggewein; but the Endeavour has made it plainly appear by her track, that the land theſe perſons ſaw, and took for a continent, was no ſuch thing; and although what has been aſſerted by ſome geographers and by Mr. Dalrymple, in reſpect to Quiros, it is not probable that he ſaw any ſigns of a continent to the ſouthward of two iſlands, which he diſcovered in latitude 25 or 26, and may lie between the longitude of 130° and 140° W. for if he had, he would undoubtedly have ſailed in ſearch of it. The chief object of Quiros's voyage was to find out a ſouthern continent; conſequently, if he was in latitude 26° S. and longitude 146° W. where the iſlands he diſcovered are fixed by Mr. Dalrymple, we may juſtly infer, that no part extends to that latitude of a ſouthern continent.

Though no continent may be found, there are probably a great number of new iſlands in the tropical regions, which were never yet viſited by an European veſſel, and to confirm which, Tupia, at different times, mentioned about an hundred and thirty, and made out no leſs than ſeventy-four in a chart of his own drawing.

On Saturday the 31ſt they left Cape Farewell, which lies in lat. 40° 33′ S. longitude, and ſteered weſtward till the ninth of April, when in latitude 38° 29′ S. a tropic bird was ſeen, which was thought very extraordinary in ſo

Digitized by Google

high a latitude. On the 15th seeing an egg bird and a gannet, which never fly far from the land, they kept sounding all night, but found no depth of water above 130 fathom.

On the 18th, two Port Egmont hens, and a pintado bird were seen, which are sure signs of land being near, which they also judged by their reckoning.

On the 19th, standing westward, they bore away for the eastermost land in sight. The point of land in sight, which was southermost, captain Cook judged to lie in latitude 38°, longitude 211° 7′, and called it Point Hicks, as Mr. Hicks, the first lieutenant, discovered it first.

At noon about four leagues distance N. 20 E. a remarkable point was seen, which Mr. Cook called Ram Head, from its being so like that at the entrance of Plymouth Sound. What they had perceived of the land, seemed low and level, the shore a white sand, and the inland part green and woody. They here saw three water spouts at once; two were about two league distance from them, and the third at a much greater distance, upon their larboard quarter.

The northermost land which they could discern bore N. by E. ½ E. and a small island near a point on the main was distant two leagues W. Captain Cook gave the name of

Cape

Digitized by Google

Cape Howe to this point, which may be known by the trending of the coaſt, being north on one ſide, and ſouth weſt on the other; it may be known likewiſe by ſeveral round hills juſt within it, upon the main.

On the 20th, the weather being clear, they had a good view of this pleaſing country; its height is moderate, and diſcovers a proſpect of hills and vallies, ridges and plains, interſperſed with ſome lawns, and in general very woody. They continued their courſe to the northward, and ſoon diſcovered ſmoke in many places, which was a proof that there were inhabitants.

At ſix in the morning of the 21ſt, they were abreaſt of a mountain of a conſiderable height near the ſhore, on which account captain Cook called it Mount Dromedary: and to a point which is formed by the ſhore under this mountain, and over which there is a peaked hillock the captain gave the name of Point Dromedary.

Continuing to ſteer along the ſhore N. by E. and N. N. E. they ſaw in many places ſmoke, and at five in the evening, they found themſelves abreaſt of a point of land which roſe in a perpendicular cliff, which Mr. Cook called Point Upright.

On the 22d, at four in the morning they made ſail in for the land, but to no purpoſe, as they found themſelves driven about three leagues

Digitized by Google

leagues to the ſouthward. However, they kept ſteering with a gentle breeze along the ſhore N. N. E. and being ſo near the land, they could diſtinguiſh ſeveral of the natives of a black, or very dark colour, upon the beach. At noon, they could perceive a remarkable peaked hill, bearing N. 32° 30′ W. reſembling a ſquare dove-houſe, with a dome at the top, and which captain Cook called the Pigeon Houſe; and under the ſhore, there was a ſmall iſland which bore N. W. about two or three leagues. They ſaw ſeveral high mountains between Mount Dromedary and the Pigeon Houſe, which are all covered with wood except two, which lie behind the Pigeon Houſe, are flat at the top, and ſurrounded with ſteep rocky cliffs as far as they could ſee. The trees of this country, ſeem to be large, lofty, and very plentifully diſtributed.

On the 24th, being in latitute 35° 10′ S. a point of land bore W. nineteen miles diſtant, which they had diſcovered on St. George's day, and to which captain Cook gave the name of Cape George.

On the 25th, in latitude 34° 32′ S. longitude 208° 36′ W. and about three or four leagues from ſhore, they ſaw ſmoke near the beach in ſeveral places. To the northward, about two leagues of Cape George, a bay ſeemed to be formed by the ſhore, in latitude 35° 6′ the north point of which, on account of its ſhape, captain

Digitized by Google

captain Cook called Long Nose; about eight leagues north of it they saw a point with land about it of a reddish colour, for which reason captain Cook gave it the name of Red Point: to the north west of which, and a small distance inland, there stands a hill of a round form, the top of which resembles the crown of a hat. In the evening they perceived smoke in several places along the shore, and two or three times afterwards they saw fire. They were becalmed during the night, but they got a breeze from the land about one in the morning, and steered N. E. on the 26th at noon, being in latitude 34° 10′ S. longitude 208° 27′ W. they saw some white cliffs rising perpendicular from the sea to a very great height.

On the 27th, being between four and five miles from the shore, they saw many of the natives walking along the shore, some of them carrying a small canoe upon their shoulders, which they at first, imagined they were going to put into the water, and come off to them, but being disappointed, captain Cook was resolved to go on shore in the yawl, with as many as it would contain; however, only Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, Tupia, and the captain embarked, with four rowers, and they made the best of their way to that part of the shore where they saw the Indians, close to which, at the water's edge, there were four small canoes lying. The Indians seemed to be waiting for their landing; but to their great disappointment, when they came

Digitized by Google

came near them, they ſet off for the woods: notwithſtanding, they were reſolved to go on ſhore, and, if poſſible, procure an interview; but this they alſo could not accompliſh, on account of a great ſurf which beat upon the beach to ſuch a degree that they could not poſſibly land: they therefore were obliged to be content with viewing thoſe objects which preſented themſelves from the water: among the reſt were the canoes, which ſeemed to reſemble very much the ſmaller ſort of thoſe at New Zealand. They perceived trees on ſhore, not very large, among which there was no underwood; and they could diſcern many of them to be of the palm kind, and ſome were cabbage trees. As they could only feaſt their eyes, and excite rather than ſatisfy their curioſity, they returned to the ſhip about five in the evening. It falling calm, their ſituation became very diſagreeable, being not above a mile and a half from ſhore, and within ſome breakers, which lay to the ſouthward; however, luckily a light breeze came off the land, and freed them from danger: they now ſtood to the northward, and at day-break, on the 28th, they ſaw a bay, which ſeemed to anſwer every purpoſe for them, and accordingly captain Cook was determined to go into it with the ſhip. In order to accompliſh this deſign, he ſent the maſter in the pinnace to ſound the entrance, and he kept turning up with the wind right out. About a mile diſtant, at noon, the mouth of the bay bore N. N. W. they directed their glaſſes to a ſpot where

Digitized by Google

where they ſaw ſmoke on the ſhore, and ſoon perceived ten of the natives, who left their fire, as they came near them, and placed themſelves on a little eminence, from which they could obſerve their motions with great convenience. Immediately after, two canoes in each of which there were two men, came juſt under the eminence to the ſhore, and the men joined thoſe on the top of it. The pinnace now approaching the place, they all retired farther up the hill, except one, who concealed himſelf near the landing-place among ſome rocks. Moſt of the Indians took the ſame route with the pinnace as it proceeded along the ſhore, keeping abreaſt of her at a diſtance; the maſter informed the gentlemen that ſome of them from a cove a little within the harbour had come down to invite him to land, by ſeveral ſigns and words which he could not underſtand; but that they were all armed with long pikes, and a weapon made of wood like a cimeter in form. Thoſe who did not follow the boat, perceiving the approach of the ſhip, uſed ſeveral threatening geſtures, with brandiſhing their weapons; two in particular made a very ſtrange appearance, their faces being ſeemingly duſted with a white powder, with broad ſtreaks of the ſame colour, painted on their bodies in an oblique manner over their backs and breaſts, which reſembled our ſoldiers croſs-belts; their legs and thighs were painted in the ſame manner, like broad garters: they ſeemed to talk with great earneſtneſs to each

Digitized by Google

each other, and each of them held in his hand the wooden weapon that reſembled a cimeter.

Early in the afternoon they anchored under the ſouth ſhore in ſix fathom water, about two miles within the entrance, the ſouth point bearing S. E. and the north point Eaſt. They ſaw, on both points of the bay, a few huts, and ſeveral of the natives of both ſexes. They ſaw four ſmall canoes under the ſouth head, with one man on board of each, who ſeemed to be very buſy in ſtriking fiſh with a long pike; they were very near the ſurf, and ſo intent upon their buſineſs, that they hardly ſaw the ſhip, although ſhe paſſed within a quarter of a mile of them.

The End of Vol. XII.

Digitized by Google

THE BEAUTIES OF NATURE AND ART DISPLAYED, IN A TOUR THROUGH THE WORLD;

CONTAINING

I. A General Account of all the Countries in the World, remarkable for either Natural or Artificial Curiosities; their Situation, Boundaries, Extent, and Divisions; their Rivers, Air, Soil, chief Cities, &c.

II. A particular Account of the most curious natural Productions of each Country, in the Animal, Vegetable, and Fossil Kingdoms; of remarkable Mountains, Caverns and Volcanos; of Medicinal and other singular Springs; of Cataracts, Whirlpools, &c

III. An Historical Account of the most remarkable Earthquakes, Inundations, Fires, Epidemic Diseases, and other public Calamities, which have, at different Times, visited the Inhabitants.

IV. Extraordinary Instances of Longevity, Fertility, &c. among the Inhabitants; together with an Account of their most celebrated Inventions, Discoveries, &c.

V. Particular Descriptions of the most remarkable public Buildings, and other singular Productions of Art.

VI. Curious Remains of Antiquity; remarkable Laws, Customs, and Traditions of the Inhabitants; together with a Summary View of the most extraordinary Revolutions among them.

Illustrated and embellished with Copper-Plates.

The SECOND EDITION, greatly improved.

VOL. XIII.

LONDON:
Printed for G. Robinson, in Pater-Noster-Row 1775.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

THE BEAUTIES OF NATURE AND ART DISPLAYED, IN A TOUR THROUGH THE WORLD.

CAPTAIN COOK's VOYAGE round the World, in the Year, 1768, 1769, and 1770, continued.

THE ship had anchored abreast of a small village, consisting of very few houses; as the boat was getting ready to hoist out, they saw an old woman with three children, come out of the wood; she as well as the children were loaded with fire-wood; when she came near the houses, she was met by three others younger than those she had with her. She frequently looked at the ship, without expressing either fear or surprise; but proceeded to kindle

Digitized by Google

a fire, when the fishermen came in with their four canoes: as soon as they had landed, and hauled up their boats, they began to dress their victuals without seeming to take the least notice of the ship, though within half a mile of them. They remarked with some astonishment that not one of these people had any kind of cloathing.

As soon as they had dined on board the ship, they manned the boats, and set out with Tupia in order to land where these people were, hoping that they would not regard their coming on shore, any more than they had the ship's coming into the bay; but in this they were mistaken; for, having come near the rocks, two men came down upon them and disputed their landing, whilst the rest made off. These champions had each a lance about ten feet long, and a short stick which they handled as if it assisted them in throwing the lance: they called to them in a harsh dissonant language, uttered with an angry and loud tone, which was unintelligible both to them and Tupia; tho' the Indians were but two, and they were forty, the former seemed to be resolute in the defence of their coast, for which Capt. Cook admired their courage, and not chusing to commence hostilities with such an unequal force, he made the boat lie upon her oars: in this situation they parlied by signs for some little time, during which Mr. Cook caused nails, beads, and other trifling things to be thrown

Digitized by Google

thrown among them to gain their good will, which they took up and seemed to like. After this they made signs that they were in want of water, and did all they could to convince them that they were not enemies. This they imagined had had its desired effect, for they now waved to them, which captain Cook took to be an invitation; but as soon as they attempted to land, they began to oppose them again. One seemed to be a man of a middle age, and the other a youth about nineteen or twenty, and having no other resource captain Cook fired a musquet at them. The report, caused the youngest to drop a bundle of lances, which, upon recollection, he snatched up again in a great hurry. They then threw a stone at them, which made Mr. Cook order some small shot to be fired, which struck the legs of the eldest, who immediately ran to one of the houses, which was about an hundred yards distant; he judged now that they might land, and accordingly they did; but they were surprised to find that he had only left the rock in order to get a shield, which they saw him returning with for his defence. Upon his coming up he threw a lance at them, which was followed by another from his comrade, neither of which, as it happened, did any mischief. The captain then ordered another musket with small shot to be fired at them, which made one of them throw another lance, and then they both made their escape. Mr. Banks suggested that they might have poisoned the lances, which

Digitized by Google

hindered them from going into the woods, and pursuing the two natives, one of whom they might probably have taken. They went directly to the huts, where they found the children, who had concealed themselves behind some bark and a shield; they peeped at them, but left them as they found them, without their knowing that they had seen them; they left some beads, ribbons, pieces of cloth, and other presents in the house, by which they hoped to procure their good will; the lances which they found, to about fifty in number, they took away with them, the length of each was from six to fifteen feet long, and had four prongs like a fish-gig, which were pointed with fish-bone, and very sharp: they found them smeared with a viscous substance of a green colour, which corroborated with the opinion of Mr. Banks, though they discovered afterwards that instead of their being poisoned, they had been used in striking fish, and what appeared upon them of a green colour was nothing more than the sea weed. Their canoes that lay upon the beach, were the worst they had ever seen: they were between twelve and fourteen feet in length, and made of an entire piece of the bark of a tree, this was drawn together and fastened at each end, the middle being extended with sticks placed across as thwarts from gunwale to gunwale. As for fresh water, they could find none, but what was in a hole dug in the sand.

They

Digitized by Google

They returned to the ſhip and depoſited their lances on board, and they ſet out for the north point of the bay, where they had before ſeen ſeveral of the inhabitants, but which was now totally deſerted. However, they found freſh water here, which dropt from the top of the rocks to the bottom, where it ſtood in pools among the hollows, but was very difficult for them to procure.

On the 29th in the morning, captain Cook ſent ſome men to the place where they had firſt landed, in order to dig holes in the ſand to receive the water; but going aſhore ſoon afterwards with the gentlemen, they made a more diligent ſearch, and found a ſmall ſtream, which anſwered their purpoſe.

When they went to viſit the hut where they had ſeen the children, they were greatly chagrined to find the beads and ribbons in the ſame places where they had left them the night before, and not an Indian viſible.

Captain Cook having ſent men aſhore to cut wood, and ſome empty water-caſks for water, he took the pinnace and examined the bay. Whilſt he was upon this buſineſs he ſaw ſeveral of the natives, who fled at his approach. At one place where he landed they had been broiling freſh muſcles upon ſmall fires, which he found, as well as ſome of the muſcles; he alſo found here ſome of the largeſt oyſter ſhells he had ever met with.

As

Digitized by Google

As soon as the men went on board to dinner, several of the natives came down to the place, and inspected the casks with great attention and curiosity without touching them: they thought fit however to take away the canoes which were near the landing-place, and then disappeared. In the afternoon, the men being ashore, sixteen or eighteen of the natives, all armed, advanced boldly till they came within about an hundred yards of them, two of them, indeed, came nearer, but the major part of them stopped all on a sudden. Mr. Hicks, one of the officers, advanced to meet them with presents, which he offered as he approached, at the same time expressing by every sign he could imagine, all the kindness and friendship possible, but all proved ineffectual; for they retired before he could get up with them, and it would have been in vain to have followed them. They contented themselves in going to a sandy cove on the north side of the bay, and catching with the seine, in three or four hauls, above three hundred weight of fish, which was equally divided on board the ship.

Before day-break the next morning, the Indians came down to the houses which the ship was abreast of, and shouted very loud. They were seen walking along the beach as soon as it was light, and presently after they retired to the woods about a mile from shore, and kindled several fires.

Mr.

Digitized by Google

Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander went on shore with some of the ship's crew; the gentlemen went in search of plants, for which they repaired to the woods; in the interim some of the men being at a little distance from the main body of their people, and cutting of grass, the Indians came up to them to the number of fourteen or fifteen, with sticks that shone like muskets, as the serjeant of marines said. This caused the grass-cutters to draw together and repair to the main body, which the Indians took for a retreat, and were encouraged to pursue them; but they soon stopt, and after giving two or three shouts, they returned into the woods. They did the same thing in the evening, first advancing, shouting, and then retiring. Captain Cook followed them a considerable space along the shore alone and unarmed, but they would not stop.

Early next morning, being the first of May, the body of one of the seamen, whose name was Forby Sutherland, and who died the evening before, was buried near the watering-place; on this account captain Cook called the south point of this bay Sutherland point. Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, captain Cook, and seven others resolved this day to make an excursion into the country; and for this expedition they were properly accoutred; accordingly they set out, and repaired first to the huts, near the watering-place, whither some of the Indians resorted every day; and though the little presents were

were ſtill there which they had before depoſited, they left more valuable ones, ſuch as cloth, looking-glaſſes, combs, and beads, and then purſued their journey. The ſoil they diſcovered to be either ſwamp or light ſand, and the face of the country was beautified with variety of wood and lawn. The trees are tall, and ſtrait, without underwood, and ſtand at ſuch a diſtance from one another, that the whole country might be cultivated, at leaſt where the ſwamps do not interfere, without cutting one of them down; the ground between the trees is covered with graſs, which is very abundant, and grows in tufts about as big as a hand can graſp, which ſtand very thick. They ſaw many of the houſes of the natives, and places where they had ſlept without ſhelter upon the graſs. They ſaw only one of the people, who ran away as ſoon as he ſaw them. The gentlemen left preſents at all thoſe places in hopes at length to gain their confidence. A quadruped about the ſize of a rabbit ran by them at ſome diſtance, which Mr. Banks's greyhound got ſight of, and probably would have caught, if he had not lamed himſelf at his firſt ſetting off, againſt a ſtump which was in the long graſs. By the dung they ſaw afterwards of an animal which fed upon the graſs, they judged there muſt be deer; they alſo ſaw the footſteps of another, which ſeemed to be thoſe of a wolf: and they tracked a ſmall animal, whoſe feet was not unlike that of a polecat or weaſel. There were various kinds of birds

in

Digitized by Google

in the trees, some of which were very beautiful, particularly cockatoos and loriquets, which flew together in scores. They found wood felled by the natives with some blunt instrument, and some that had the bark stript off. There were not many species of trees; one among the rest was large, and yielded a gum like the sanguis draconis; and steps had been cut in some of them, about three feet distance from each other, for the facility of climbing.

One of the ship's company straggling a long way from the rest, met with a very old man and woand some children; they were by the waterside sitting under a tree, and neither party perceived the other till they came close to one another. By the description he gave of these people, they were not black, but of a very dark colour. The man and woman were grey-headed; the hair of the man's head was bushy, and his beard rough and long; the woman's hair was cropped short, and both of them were quite naked. Mr. Monkhouse the surgeon, and one of the men, belonging to another party having also strayed from their companions, observed six Indians standing together about fifty yards distance from them; one of whom uttered a word extremely loud, upon which a lance was instantly thrown at them out of the wood, which very narrowly missed them, and which made him judge this word to be a signal. As soon as the Indians perceived that the weapon had not taken effect, they set off as fast as possible.

Captain

Captain Cook called this place Botany Bay, from the great quantity of plants which were collected by Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander. Its situation is in latitude 34° S. longitude 208° 37′ W. It may be known by the land on the sea-coast, which is of a moderate height, and almost level; it is in general higher than the more inland part, with steep rocky cliffs close to the sea, which resemble a long island lying close under the shore.

They judged it most convenient for sailing, as well as for watering, to anchor near the south shore, within the entrance about a mile; however, the captain afterwards discovered a very fine stream in the first sandy cove within the island on the north shore, before which a ship might lie almost land-locked, and from whence they could procure sufficiently of wood as well as water. There is every where plenty of wood indeed, but only two kinds which may be said to be timber. One of them resembles the English oak, and is the same from which is yielded the reddish gum like sanguis draconis, and the wood is like lignum vitæ, being dark coloured, heavy and hard: the other grows tall and strait, not unlike the pine, the wood of which is also hard and heavy, and resembles the live oak of America. There are several kinds of the palm, and shrubs and mangroves grow near the head of the bay in great plenty.

Whilst

Whilſt they were in this harbour, the captain had the Engliſh colours diſplayed every day on ſhore, and he cauſed to be inſcribed upon one of the trees near the watering-place, the ſhip's name and the date of the year.

About eight o'clock at the fulland change of the moon it is high water here, and the tide riſes and falls between four and five feet perpendicularly.

On the 6th of May 1770, they took leave of Botany Bay, with a light breeze at N. W. and ſteering N. N. E. along the ſhore, they came abreaſt of a bay where they found good anchorage, and to which the captain gave the name of Port Jackſon, and ſoon after they came within four leagues of ſome broken land, that ſeemed to form a bay, which the captain called Broken Bay.

On the 7th, they came to ſome lands which from their appearance was called Cape Three Points. They ſaw ſmoke in ſeveral places in paſſing by this bay; and at three or four leagues diſtance from the ſhore, the land ſeemed to form two hillocks which captain Cook called Cape Hawke.

On the 11th in the afternoon, at a little diſtance from the beach, they ſaw ſmoke in ſeveral places, particularly on the top of a hill, which was the firſt upon elevated ground that

 they

Digitized by Google

they had ſeen ſince their arrival upon the coaſt. In the evening they ſaw three remarkably large high hills near each other, and theſe hills bearing ſome reſemblance to one another, the captain gave them the name of the Three Brothers.

On the 13th, being between three and four leagues from the ſhore, they ſaw a point, or head-land of a conſiderable height, on which they perceived fires that cauſed a great quantity of ſmoke, which was called Smokey Cape.

On the 15th, being about a league from the ſhore, they ſaw ſmoke in many places, and taking their glaſſes, they could perceive about twenty of the natives with each a large bundle upon his back, which they imagined to be palm leaves that they uſe for covering their huts: they obſerved them for the ſpace of an hour walking along the beach, till they went over a little hill, and then loſt ſight of them: they had not the leaſt curioſity or ſurprize, though they muſt have ſeen the ſhip as they walked along the ſhore: and ſhe muſt have appeared with reſpect to any other object, little leſs ſtupendous than a floating mountain would have been to us. At noon, a high point of land at three miles diſtance which bore N. W. by W. captain Cook called Cape Byron; a remarkable ſharp peaked mountain lies inland, by which it may be known, bearing N. W. by W. from it, and is in latitude 28° 37′ 30″ S. longitude 206° 30′ W.

On

On the 16th they ſaw breakers within them, at the diſtance of one league, which lie in lat. 28° 8′ S. ſtretching off eaſt from a point of land two leagues, under which there is a ſmall iſland. Their ſituation is to be known by the peaked mountain juſt mentioned, which bears from them S. W. by W. and to which the captain gave the name of Mount Warning. This mountain lies eight leagues inland, in lat. 28° 22′ S. There is high and hilly land about it, but it is very remarkable of itſelf; and the captain called the point off which theſe ſhoals lie, Point Danger.

At noon they diſcovered on their larboard bow more breakers; their depth of water being thirty-ſeven fathom, the northermoſt land at ſun ſet bore N. by W. the breakers N. W. by W. diſtant four miles, and the northermoſt land ſet at noon, formed a point, which Capt. Cook called Point Look-out, W. diſtant five or ſix miles, in the latitude of 27° 6′. A wide open bay is formed by the ſhore on the ſide of this point, in the bottom of which they could but juſt ſee the land from the top-maſt head, and the captain called it Moreton's Bay.

The ſituation of theſe breakers is between three and four miles from Point Look-out; and from the ſouthward they had a great ſea which broke upon them very high.

Digitized by Google

At two in the morning, on the 18th, a point of land which they had ſet the night before bore S. W. by W. between three and four leagues diſtant, lying in latitude 25° 58′, longitude 206° 48 W. the land is of a moderate and equal height within, but the point is very unequal, and looks like two ſmall iſlands lying under the land, for which reaſon Captain Cook called it Double Iſland Point; the white cliffs on the north ſide of it are very remarkable, and by which it may be known. The land here trends to the N. W. by which a large open bay is formed, but the bottom is ſo low a flat that they could hardly diſcern it from their deck. They could diſcover with their glaſſes great patches of ſand many acres in extent, which were moveable, and ſome of them that had not been long in a place; trees having been half buried in ſeveral parts, the tops of which they could diſcern to be ſtill green; and in other places the naked trunks of ſome, which the ſand had ſurrounded long enough to demoliſh. The woods appeared in other places to be low and ſhrubby, without any ſigns of inhabitants. They ſaw two beautiful water-ſnakes ſwim by the ſhip: they were ſpotted like land ſnakes, and their tails were broad and flat, which probably ſerved them in lieu of fins when ſwimming.

At one o'clock on the 19th, being diſtant from the ſhore four miles, with ſeventeen fathom water, they paſſed a point of land, or black-

Digitized by Google

black-bluff head lying in latitude 25° 3′, upon which were aſſembled a great number of the natives, and therefore captain Cook gave it the name of Indian Head. N. by W. of this head, about four miles, is another very ſimilar to it, low and ſandy next to the ſea, behind which nothing, even from the maſt head, could be diſcovered.

Being in latitude 24° 22′ and Sand Cape bearing S. ½ E. diſtant eight leagues, it was remarkable that upon finding the boat a-head to ſound, which was hardly a quarter of a mile to the ſouthward, they had ſix fathom on board the ſhip, and the boat had little more than five, and that they had thirteen immediately after ſix fathom, and then twenty, as faſt as the lead could be caſt. It was conjectured from theſe circumſtances, that the ſhoal on the weſt ſide was ſteep. Captain Cook called this ſhoal the Break Sea Spit, from the ſmoothneſs of water they now had, when to the ſouthward they always had a high ſea from the S. E.

On the 21ſt, at ſeven in the morning, they ſaw the land of Sandy Cape, from their maſt-head, which bore S. E. ½ E. about thirteen leagues diſtant; at nine they ſaw land to the weſtward, and in ſeveral places they ſoon after ſaw ſmoke. They had ſeen for ſome days paſt ſeveral of the ſea birds called boobies, of which they had never met with any before;

Digitized by Google

a ſmall flock paſſed by them laſt night, and continued their flight to N. W. Early in the morning, before ſun-riſe, to half an hour after, they ſaw flights of them coming inceſſantly from the N. N. W. and flying to the S. S. E. without one of them deviating from this direction, which gave them room to think that there muſt be a lagoon, river, or at leaſt ſome ſhallow water to the ſouthward of them, in the bottom of the deep bay, whither theſe birds reſorted to for food in the day, and that there were ſome iſlands not far to the northward to which in the night they repaired. To this bay, in honor of captain Hervey, Mr. Cook gave the name of Hervey's Bay.

On the 27th, being in latitude 22° 53′ S. and the northermoſt point of land in ſight now bearing N. N. W. diſtant ten miles, captain Cook gave it the name of Cape Manifold, from the numerous high hills which they ſaw over it: it lies in latitude 22° 43′ S. The ſhore forms a large bay between theſe capes, to which the captain gave the name of Keppel Bay; and he alſo called the iſlands Keppel's Iſlands, on which they ſaw people.

Captain Cook gave the name of Thirſty Sound, to an inlet in which the ſhip lay, as they could get no freſh water from thence. It lies in latitude 22° 10′ S. and longitude 210° 18′. W and is to be known by ſeveral

Digitized by Google

ſmall iſlands lying N. W. under the ſhore, from two to five leagues diſtant; and by ſeveral more iſlands that are directly before it, between three and four leagues out at ſea. There is good anchorage in this inlet from ſeven to four fathom; and very convenient places for laying a ſhip down where the water riſes ſixteen or eighteen feet at ſpring tides, which flows about eleven o'clock the full and change of the moon. They ſaw two turtles, neither of which they could take; neither could they catch either fiſh or wild-fowl, except a few ſmall land-birds: there were indeed the ſame ſorts of water-fowl as they ſaw in Botany Bay, but they could not get a ſhot at them they were ſo ſhy.

For the above reaſons, Mr. Cook weighed at ſix o'clock in the morning on the 31ſt and ſet ſail, ſtanding to the N. W. with a freſh breeze to S. S. E. and keeping without the group of ſmall iſlands that lie in ſhore, and to the N. W. of Thirſty Sound, there being ſeemingly no ſafe paſſage between them and the main; notwithſtanding there were iſlands as far as they could ſee without them.

On the 2d of June, their latitude by obſervation was 20° 56′, and a high promontory, which captain Cook called Cape Hillſborough, bore W. half N. diſtant ſeven miles. Here the land is diverſified by mountains, hills, plains, and vallies, and has the appearance of being well cloathed with herbage and wood: ſcarcely

Digitized by Google

ſcarcely any of the iſlands which are parallel to the coaſt, are more than five leagues in circumference, and many are not four miles; they are of various heights and extent. There are others much leſs, from which they perceived ſmoke in different places.

On the 3d at eight o'clock in the morning, they ſaw ſome low land, which turned out to be a bay, about the depth of five or ſix leagues, which made them haul their wind to the eaſtward round the north part of the bay, bearing at that time N. E. by N. from them, diſtant four leagues. This point Mr. Cook called Cape Conway, and it lies in latitude 26° 36′ S. longitude 211° 28′, and the bay between that cape and Cape Hillſborough, captain Cook named Repulſe Bay. One of the ſeveral iſlands that lie upon this coaſt, is more remarkable than the others, from its circuit being ſmall, and of a great height and peaked, lying ten miles E. by S. from Cape Conway, at the ſouth end of the paſſage. This paſſage was from three to ſeven miles in breadth, and eight or nine leagues in length, N. by W. half W. S. by E. half E. the whole of which may be reckoned a ſafe harbour, beſides the ſmall coves and bays wherein ſhips might lie with the utmoſt ſecurity. They diſcovered on one of the iſlands by the help of their glaſſes two men and a woman, and a canoe with an out-rigger, differently conſtructed from any they had ſeen in other parts; which gave them reaſon to imagine

imagine that these people were in every respect far superior to those they had seen before. Mr. Cook called this passage Whitsunday's Passage, because it was discovered on Whitsunday; and in honour to his royal highness the duke, he called the islands Cumberland Islands.

On the 4th at day-break, they found themselves abreast of the point which had been the farthest the evening before to the north west, which the captain called Cape Glouceſter, and is in latitude 19° 59′ S. longitude 211° 49′ W. there is an island, by which it may be known, that lies out at sea N. by W. half W. five or six leagues off it, and to which Mr. Cook gave the name of Holborne Isle. On the West side the land forms a deep bay, which he called Edgcumbe Bay, but they continued their course without looking at it.

On the 6th as they were steering W. N. W. they had the mouth of a bay entirely open, which extended from S. half E. to S. W. half S. two leagues distant; to which Capt. Cook gave the name of Cleaveland Bay; to East point, he called Cape Cleaveland, and the West, which looked like an island, he called the Magnetical Isle, from the effect it had on the compass. They are both more rugged, rocky, and barren than any they had yet seen upon the coast; yet from the smoke that they saw, there must have been inhabitants.

On

On the 7th in the afternoon they saw some people and canoes, and upon one of these islands they discovered something that resembled cocoa nut-trees: for which reason, the captain sent lieutenant Hicks ashore, in hopes of getting some of them; Mr. Banks and Dr. Solander went with him to procure such things as the place afforded, while the ship kept standing in for the island. Upon their return they informed them that the cocoa nut-trees, proved to be a small kind of cabbage palm, and that they had met with nothing worth bringing away except a few plants. They saw none of the inhabitants but one, who came very near the beach, and shouted with a loud voice as they were putting off, but it being very dark they could not see him. Captain Cook called this land Point Hillock, on account of its form, being of a considerable height, and may be known by a rock, or round hillock, which seems to be detached from the point, though they join at the same time. A large bay which the shore forms, between this cape and Magnetical Isle, he called Halifax Bay.

On the 8th they met with a point of land lying N. by W. half W. from Point Hillock, eleven miles distant, which Mr. Cook called Cape Sandwich: it may be known by the high craggy land over it, and a small island east of it, at a mile's distance, and others that lie to the northward about two leagues. The land trends

Digitized by Google

trends from Cape Sandwich W. and afterwards N. and forms a very large bay, to which he gave the name of Rockingham Bay, where may be found good ſhelter, and good anchorage, but they did not make any ſtay here, keeping along the ſhore to the northward, for ſome ſmall iſlands lying off the northern point of the bay. They ſaw with their glaſſes upon one of the neareſt iſlands, about thirty of the natives, ſtanding all together, conſiſting of men, women, and children, who looked at the ſhip with great attention for the firſt time: they were of the ſame complexion, and naked as all the reſt they had before ſeen.

On the 9th being in latitude 16° 57′ S. with twenty fathom water, and abreaſt of the point on the main. The captain called it Cape Grafton; its latitude is 16° 57′ S. and longitude 214° 6′ W. and the land as well as the coaſt is high, rocky, and thinly covered with wood for about twenty leagues ſouthward; they here ſaw fires in the night, and people in the day. Round Cape Grafton, three miles to the weſtward of the cape they diſcovered a bay, in which they anchored at a little diſtance from ſhore, in an indifferent bottom. A green woody iſland, which lies N. by E. half E. diſtant three or four leagues from Cape Grafton, is called Green Iſland in the chart. Between the nothernmoſt point and Cape Grafton, there is a bay formed by the land, to which captain Cook

Digitized by Google

Cook gave the name of Trinity Bay, as they diſcovered it on Trinity Sunday.

On the 10th after having weathered all dangers through an extent of two and twenty degrees of latitude, which is above one thouſand three hundred miles, they now met with a terrible calamity, and he therefore called the nothernmoſt point Cape Tribulation. A few minutes before eleven, thinking themſelves free from any danger, the water on a ſudden ſhallowed from twenty to ſeventeen fathom, and before they had time to caſt again, the ſhip ſtruck, and was motionleſs, except the motion the ſurge occaſioned, which beat her againſt the crags of the rock where ſhe remained. This ſoon alarmed the gentlemen, who were in bed, and in a few moments every body was upon deck, in the greateſt conſternation. They knew that they could not be very near ſhore, and they had great reaſon to think that they were upon a rock of coral, the points of which being ſharp, renders it more fatal than any other; thus ſituated, they hoiſted out their boats and examined the depth of water round the veſſel; and found their danger as imminent as poſſible, the ſhip being carried over a ledge of this rock, and confined within a hollow; the depth of water was from three or four feet in ſome places, to as many fathom in others. As ſoon as their long boat was out, they ſtruck their yards and top-maſts, and their ſtream anchor was carried out on the ſtarboard bow, the

Digitized by Google

the coasting anchor and cable were put into the boat, in order to carry it out the same way; but the water being found to be deepest astern, the anchor was carried out from the stern instead of the head, which having taken ground, they put all the force they were masters of to the capstern, so that if the anchor stood, they might get the ship off; but unfortunately they could not move her; and to complete their distress, they could see by the light of the moon, her sheathing boards from the bottom, floating round her, and at length her false keel; so that they expected to be swallowed up every instant, especially as she continued all the time to beat against the rock with great violence.

After this, they threw many things over board, in order that when it should be high water, which they expected at eleven o'clock in the forenoon on the 11th, they might then try to heave her off; but to their great surprize and concern, she did not float by a foot and a half, though she was fifty tons lighter than she had been, the tide falling so much short of that in the night; luckily for them that it was at present a dead calm, for otherwise the ship must have been lost. They now threw every thing over board that they could possibly spare, and, as their dernier resource, waited for the tide at midnight. All their pumps were employed, but one, which would not work, and the leak encreasing to such a degree, that it was ima-

Digitized by Google

gined ſhe muſt have gone to the bottom as ſoon as the rock ceaſed to ſupport her. This was a moſt dreadful ſituation, knowing at the ſame time that their boats could not carry them all on ſhore, to ſome land which they ſaw at about eight leagues diſtance. However, they prepared to make their laſt effort; they manned the capſtern and windlaſs with as many hands as could be ſpared from the pumps, and, the veſſel floating about twenty minutes after ten o'clock, they heaved her into deep water; they now were very glad to find that ſhe did not admit of more water than ſhe had done upon the rock. At length after the different agitations of the mind, and between hope and deſpair, having worked at the pumps 'till the ſpirits of every man were exhauſted, and the leak gaining upon them conſiderably, the captain had recourſe to an expedient, which Mr. Monkhouſe, one of the midſhipmen, propoſed, that had been once uſed on board a merchantman which had ſprung a leak, that admitted above four feet water in an hour, and which was brought ſafely from Virginia to London by help of the ſame. This expedient, which is called fothering the ſhip, was performed in the following manner. A lower ſtudding ſail was immediately had, and having mixed together a large quantity of oakham and wool chopped pretty ſmall, it was ſtitched down upon the ſail in handfuls very lightly, and over this was ſpread their ſheep's dung and other filth; though horſe dung, if they had it,

Digitized by Google

it, would have been better than any thing. The ſail being thus prepared, it was hauled with ropes under the bottom of the ſhip, and kept extended, and when it was under the leak, the oakham and wool was carried in from the ſurface of the ſail, by the ſuction that carried the water in. The difference that this expedient cauſed, was very great; for inſtead of not keeping the leak under with three pumps, they now eaſily could do it with one; their people upon this were in as much ſpirits as if they had got into a ſafe harbour, and nothing was now thought of, but ranging along the coaſt in ſearch of a convenient place to repair their damage, and then proſecute their voyage.

On the 15th in the evening, after having twice come to an anchor, they obſerved a fire over againſt them near the beach; and as they ſhould be detained ſome time in this place, they were in hopes of making the people uſeful to them.

On the 16th they perceived more fires upon the hills, and by the help of their glaſſes, diſcerned four Indians who made two fires on the ſhore; but they could not gueſs on what account.

They were now very much troubled with the ſcurvy, particularly poor Tupia, who had livid ſpots upon his legs, &c. although he had

Digitized by Google

taken every remedy that was in their power to prescribe; their astronomer, Mr. Green, was also very ill, which, among other circumstances, caused a disagreeable delay in their going ashore.

However on the 17th in the morning, after running the ship aground twice, they soon warped into the harbour in the Endeavour River, and got the anchors, cables, and all the hawsers on shore before night, after having moored her along side a steep beach to the south.

On the 18th they got every necessary thing ashore, and as soon as they had built a tent for their sick who were eight or nine in number, they also were removed ashore. Captain Cook took a view of the land from one of the highest hills, but could discover nothing worth notice but mangroves, with which it was over run, and over them the water flowed every tide. Mr. Banks, in his walks up the country, met with the ruins of several old houses, where the natives had been dressing shell fish. As for Tupia, he took to angling, and by dint of living upon what he caught, recovered amazingly; but nothing was of service to Mr. Green.

On the 19th upon Mr. Banks's crossing the river to survey the country on the other side, he saw some Indian houses, which appeared to have

Digitized by Google

have been deſerted but very lately; he perceived vaſt flocks of pidgeons and crows, the pidgeons were very beautiful, ſeveral of which he ſhot; and the crows exactly reſembled thoſe in England, but he could not get a ſhot at them.

On the 20th they had finiſhed clearing the ſhip, and in the evening Mr. Banks obſerved great quantities of pumice ſtones in ſeveral parts of the inlet, lying at a great diſtance above high water mark, which, however, could not come from any other place than the ſea.

At nine o'clock in the morning on the 22d, the carpenters began their work, and the ſmiths were occupied in making bolts and nails, while ſome of the people were gone to the other ſide of the water to ſhoot pidgeons for the invalids; they reported, upon their return, that they had ſeen an animal as large as a greyhound, ſlender in form, of a mouſe colour, and very ſwift; they alſo found a fine ſtream of freſh water, and ſaw many Indian houſes.

On the 26th ſome of the gentlemen having been in the woods, brought home the leaves of a plant, which reſembled what is called coccos in the Weſt Indies; but the roots upon trial were too acrid to be eaten; and the leaves had in a great degree the taſte of ſpinnage. From whence theſe plants were taken, great

Digitized by Google

plenty of cabbage trees grew, and a plantain that grows wild, the fruit of which is very ſtony; there was alſo another fruit of a deep purple colour, about the ſize of a ſmall golden pippin, but ſomewhat flatter; it was very hard and diſagreeable when firſt gathered, but in a few days after, it became ſoft, and reſembled a damaſcene in taſte.

Mr. Banks upon an excurſion on the 28th with ſome of the people, ſhewed them the plant which the Weſt Indians call kalc, and which they uſed as greens. They found a tree with notches, which the natives make for climbing, they alſo diſcovered neſts of white ants, which are very pernicious, and like thoſe of the Eaſt Indies; the form of their neſts was pyramidical.

On the 29th the boat was ſent out with the ſeine, and returned with a great quantity of fiſh, and one of the midſhipmen, who was an American, having that day been abroad, ſaid he had met with a wolf, that reſembled thoſe of his own country, at which he ſhot, without killing it.

On the 30th, encouraged by the preceding day's ſucceſs, the captain ſent the boat with the ſeine again for fiſh, while others went for greens; ſome of the young gentlemen were ſent to take a plan of the harbour, and captain Cook went himſelf to take a view of the ſea from

Digitized by Google

from a hill, ſituated on the ſouth point. It being low water, he could ſee with great concern, ſand banks and ſhoals innumerable, lying all along the coaſt; many about three or four miles from the ſhore, and others as far as he could ſee with his glaſs, ſeveral of which appeared but juſt above the ſurface. From what he had obſerved, the only hope of getting clear was by a paſſage to the northward; the wind blowing conſtantly from the S. E. it would have been almoſt impoſſible to return to the ſouthward again.

It was reported this day by Mr. Gore, that he had ſeen two animals like dogs, of the colour of ſtraw, reſembling a hare in their manner of running and ſize; and in the afternoon their fiſhermen returned with ſtill better ſucceſs than before, being then able to diſtribute to each man, two pounds and an half; ſo that with greens, peas, and two copious allowances of fiſh, their wants were abundantly ſupplied.

July the 1ſt they went out again with the ſeine, and were equally ſucceſsful; ſeveral animals were this day ſeen up the country, but they could catch none of them. Mr. Gore found a cocoa nut upon the beach full of barnacles, which cauſed ſome ſpeculation.

At noon on the 3d, the maſter having been out of the harbour to ſound, and in ſearch of

a

Digitized by Google

a channel to the northward, gave an account of a paſſage which he had found between the ſhoals; and ſaid that they conſiſted of coral rocks, that many of them were dry at low water, and that he had been aſhore on one of theſe rocks, where he ſaw cockles ſo large that two men could not eat one of them; variety of other ſhell fiſh he met with here, of which he brought a great quantity away with him. He ſaw ſome of the natives in the evening in a bay where he had landed, at three leagues diſtance from the ſhip, who were diſturbed from their ſupper at his approach, and ran away; they left ſome freſh ſea eggs behind them, and a fire ready kindled: but he could perceive nothing like an habitation thereabouts.

Mr. Banks, on the 5th, as he was walking on the other ſide of the harbour, found great quantities of fruits, the production of ſome of which, he could not account for, from any plant he ever ſaw in this country; among the reſt were coco-nuts, which, according to Tupia's opinion, had been opened by a particular ſort of crab, which, from his deſcription was thought to be of the ſame kind, which are called by the Dutch Beurs Krabbe; ſuch as in theſe ſeas they had never yet ſeen.

On the 6th Mr. Banks, Mr. Gore, and three men, ſet out in a ſmall boat up the river, upon an intended excurſion of two or three days, in order to reconnoitre the coun-

Digitized by Google

try, and find ſome game, with their guns. And on the 8th about four in the afternoon they returned, when they told the gentlemen, that having been up the river, they found it contracted to a narrow channel, and it was bounded by ſteep banks of a beautiful verdure, ſuch as is called in the Weſt Indies Mohoe, or the bark-tree, the hibiſcus tiliaceus. Upon the whole, the ſoil ſeemed to be very promiſing, provided it were planted and improved. Here an animal was ſeen, the deſcription of which, anſwered that of a wolf; they alſo ſaw ſeveral others which they could neither catch nor kill. They took up their lodging by the banks of the river, where they kindled a fire, but were ſo diſturbed all night with the muſquitos, that they had little or no reſt. The next day they proceeded up the river, which terminated in a freſh water brook, but where the tide ſtill fluctuated. As they were going to land they perceived ſmoke, at a little ſpace from them, and notwithſtanding they uſed every precaution, to entice the natives to keep their ground, yet when they came up to the place where the ſmoke was, all were fled, and nothing was ſeen but a fire, and the remains of what they had been dreſſing and eating. At a little diſtance were houſes, and ovens dug in the earth, like thoſe at Otaheite; they then went up to their quarters, which was a ſpacious ſandbank, ſheltered in ſome degree by a buſh, where the natives repoſed themſelves on plantain leaves, which were very ſoft; they covered

Digitized by Google

covered themſelves with their cloaks, and their pillows were bunches of graſs. This afforded the travellers ſome hopes of a better night's reſt than they had the laſt, eſpecially as they ſaw no muſquitos. Accordingly they laid down here, and reſigned themſelves to reſt, without once reflecting upon the danger they were liable to from the Indians when aſleep. The next morning, after having ſlept very ſoundly, the tide favouring their return, and the country affording nothing curious, they took to their boat, and repaired to the ſhip, where they met the maſter, who had been ſeven leagues out to ſea, and was now of opinion that there was no paſſage between the ſhoals, as he had before imagined; however, he had found a great number of turtle, and had brought three with him, that he had taken with nothing better than a boat-hook, and which weighed together ſeven hundred and ninety-one pounds.

They ſaw on the 10th four of the natives make their appearance upon the Sandy Point, on the north ſide of the river; they had a ſmall wooden canoe with them, and ſeemed very buſy in ſtriking fiſh. Captain Cook was reſolved to let them alone, and take no notice of them, which anſwered their purpoſe ſo well, that two of them in the canoe came within muſquet ſhot of them, and ſpoke in a loud tone of voice, without their underſtanding them; but they did all they could by ſigns, &c. to invite

Digitized by Google

invite them to come nearer to the ſhip, which they did without any ſigns of fear: they then threw them ſome cloth, nails, paper, beads, &c. which were received by them without the leaſt emotion of pleaſure; but upon throwing them a ſmall fiſh by accident, they ſeemed to expreſs the greateſt joy, and paddled away towards the ſhore as they imagined to fetch their companions; they ſoon returned, and came along ſide of them, when they gave them ſeveral more preſents, and then quitted them and landed where Tupia and ſome of the men had gone juſt before; they went up to Tupia's party, each of them carrying two lances, and a ſtick which they uſe in throwing them; but they were ſoon prevailed upon by Tupia, to lay them down, and making ſigns for them to ſit down by him, they complied with his requeſt, without ſeeming to be under any reſtraint whatſoever. When ſeveral more of the gentlemen went on ſhore, they ſeemed jealous leſt they ſhould ſeparate them from their weapons; but after convincing them by their behaviour that they had no ſuch deſign, they continued with them till dinner time in an amicable manner, when the gentlemen gave them an invitation, by ſigns, to go with them, which they declined, and as ſoon as they quitted them they went off in their canoe. Theſe men were in general of a middling ſtature, but they had very ſmall limbs, their ſkin ſeemed to be a dark chocolate colour, but this was more owing to dirt and ſmoke than to the real colour of it; their hair

was

Digitized by Google

was black, but not woolly; some had it short cropped, some lank, and others curled; they had painted part of their bodies red, one of them had his breast and upper lip painted with white streaks, which he called carbanda; their eyes were lively, and they had even and white teeth, they had soft and tuneable voices, and repeated after the gentlemen with great ease many words.

They had another visit the next morning from four of the natives; among whom was a stranger, and was named Yaparico; he distinguished himself by an ornament of a very striking appearance, which was the bone of a bird, as thick about as a man's finger, and five or six inches in length, which was thrust into a hole, made in the gristle by which the nostrils are divided; they had seen but one instance of this, and that was in New Zealand; they found that all these people had this part of the nose perforated for the same purpose; their ears were bored, though nothing then was hanging to them; they had bracelets of plaited hair upon their arms, and like the inhabitants of Terra del Fuego, they seemed to be fond of ornament, though they were quite naked. They gave a fish, as supposed, in return for the fish that was before given them. Till some of the gentlemen examined their canoe, they seemed in no haste to quit them, but were alarmed at this inspection, and immediately jumped into it, and made the best of their way off, without saying any thing.

Their

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

p. 318 & 319.



The Konguroo.

Digitized by Google

Their language seemed more harsh than that of the islanders in the South Sea, and they were very often repeating the word chercau, which was supposed to be an expression of admiration, by the manner in which it was spoken; they also cried out, cher, tut, tut, tut! upon seeing any thing new. Their lances resembled those of Botany Bay, with this difference that they had but a single point, which was the sting of the ray in some of them, and barbed with sharp bones of the same fish, the instrument used in throwing it, seemed to be contrived with more art than any they ever saw.

Mr. Gore on the 11th went out with his gun, and was so fortunate as to kill one of the animals which had so much been the subject of our speculation: it is very much in form like the gerbua, and resembles it also in its motion, but the size is very different, this animal at its full growth being as big as a sheep, the gerbua not larger than a rat: it is called by the natives kanguroo; the gentlemen had it dressed the next day, and they found it most delicious meat.

Nothing worthy their particular observation happened till the 18th, when they were visited by several of the natives in a familiar manner. One of whom, at their request threw his lance, which was about 8 feet in length: the swiftness and steadiness with which it flew was surprizing,

and though it was only four feet from the ground, it deeply penetrated a tree at the distance of fifty paces. They then ventured on board, where Captain Cook left them, to all appearance mightily satisfied, and Mr. Banks and the captain took a view of the country. After a walk to the northwards about seven or eight miles along the shore, they went to the top of a very high hill, and were soon convinced that their situation was at least equal to their fears: for looking which way they would, they saw scarce any thing but rocks and shoals, and no passage out to the sea, but what was attended with the most imminent danger. The next morning, ten of the natives visited the gentlemen, most of them from the other side of the river, where they saw several more, chiefly women, and like the rest, stark naked. While their guests were on board they looked wishful at the turtle, and seemed to be determined to have one of them; they at first made signs for them to give them one; but upon being refused, they seized two of them, and dragged them towards the side of the ship where their canoe was upon which the people of the ship forced them to quit their hold, and replaced them with the others: this enraged them to such a degree that they leaped into their canoe, and paddled towards the shore; in consequence of which Mr. Banks, captain Cook, and five or six of the ship's crew, took the boat and got ashore before them, where several more of their peo-

pl

Digitized by Google

ple were already employed in different buſineſſes; they no ſooner were landed than they ſeized their weapons, and then ſnatching a brand from a kittle of pitch that was boiling, they ſet the graſs on fire in a moſt dexterous manner, which being dry, and five or ſix feet in height, the conflagaration was very near deſtroying Mr. Banks's tent, which Tupia occupied during his ſickneſs: and in its way it alſo ſcorched to death a ſow and pigs.

The harbour, which they had now left, was called Endeavour river. It is only a ſmall bar harbour, or creek, running in a winding channel three or four leagues inland, and at the head of which there is a ſmall brook of freſh water.

The principal refreſhment here, was turtle, but as they were not to be had without going five leagues out to ſea, and the weather being often tempeſtuous, they did not get great quantities. Some few cabbage palms were met with, but in general ſmall, and yielded ſo little cabbage that they were not worth going after.

Beſides the kenguroo, and the opoſſum, that have been already deſcribed, and a ſort of polecat, there are wolves on this part of the coaſt, if they could judge by the tracks upon the ground; alſo ſeveral ſpecies of ſerpents; ſome of which are venomous, and ſome harm-

Digitized by Google

less: here are no tame animals but dogs, and of these they saw but two or three, which often came about the tents, to pick up the scraps and bones that happened to lie scattered near them. There did not indeed seem to be many of any animal, except the kanguroo; they seldom saw any other more than once, but this they frequently met with in the woods. Of land fowls there are crows, kites, hawks, cockatoos of two sorts, one white and the other black, a beautiful sort of loriquets, some parrots, pigeons of two or three sorts, and several small birds unknown in Europe. The water fowls are herns, whistling ducks, which perch, and, it is imagined roost upon trees, wild geese, curlieus, and some others, but these are not in abundance.

The Captain called the head land Cape Flattery, which lies in latitude 14° 56 S. longitude 214° 43′ W. and is a lofty promontory, making next the sea in two hills, with a third behind, with low sandy ground on each side: it may however be still better known by the three islands out at sea: the northermost and largest lies about five leagues from the Cape, in the direction of N. N. E. From Cape Flattery the land trends away N. W. and N. W. by W.

Mr. Banks, with the captain, set out for the northermost and largest of the three islands. In their way, they passed over a reef of coral rock

Digitized by Google

rock and ſand, which lies about two leagues from the iſland, and left another to leeward, which lies about three miles from it: on the north part of the reef, to the leeward, there is a low ſandy iſland, with trees upon it; and upon the reef which they paſſed over, they ſaw ſeveral turtle, but did not take any.

Having reached the iſland, and aſcended the higheſt hill, they looked round, and diſcovered a reef of rocks, lying between two and three leagues without the iſlands, and extending in a line N. W. and S. E. farther than they could ſee, upon which the ſea broke in a violent ſurf; this made them think that there were no ſhoals beyond them, and were in hopes of getting without them, as they perceived ſeveral breaks or openings in the reef, and deep water between that and the iſlands. They remained upon this hill till ſunſet, but the weather was ſo hazy during the whole time that they deſcended much diſappointed. They found the iſland, which is viſible at twelve leagues diſtance, to be about 8 leagues in circumference, and very rocky and barren. On the north weſt ſide, there are ſome ſandy bays, as well as ſome low land, which is covered with long thin graſs, and trees of the ſame kind with thoſe upon the main: here were alſo plenty of lizards of a very large ſize, ſome of which they took. They found alſo freſh water in two places; one was a running ſtream, but ſome-

what brackiſh, which was cloſe to the ſea; the other was a ſtanding pool, cloſe behind the ſandy beach, and this was perfectly ſweet and good. This iſland, though diſtant from the main, was ſometimes viſited by the natives. Their huts were built upon eminences, and quite expoſed to the S. E. contrary to thoſe upon the main: being built either upon the ſide of a hill, or under buſhes to ſhelter them from the wind. This place was called the Lizard Iſland; the other two high iſlands, at the diſtance of four or five miles from it, are not near ſo extenſive; and near them lie three others, ſtill ſmaller, and low, with ſeveral ſhoals or reefs, eſpecially to the S. E. there is a clear paſſage from Cape Flattery to theſe iſlands, and quite to the outward reefs, ſailing from Lizard Iſland to the notrh weſt, and the others to the ſouth eaſt.

They afterwards landed upon Sandy Iſland and ſaw a great number of birds, chiefly ſea-fowl: they alſo found the neſt of an eagle with young ones, which they killed; and the neſt of ſome other bird, they knew not what, of an enormous ſize; it was erected with ſticks upon the ground, and about twenty-ſix feet in circumference, and two feet eight inches high. They found alſo that this place had been viſited by the Indians, probably to eat turtle, many of which were ſeen upon the iſland, and a great number of their ſhells.

This

This place was named Eagle Iſland, and after leaving it, they ſteered S. W. directly for the ſhip.

At break of day, they got under ſail, and ſtood out N. E. for the north weſt end of Lizard Iſland, leaving Eagle Iſland to windward.

The paſſage or channel, through which they paſſed into the open ſea beyond the reef, lies in latitude 14° 32′ S. and may be known by the three high iſlands within it, which were called the Iſlands of Direction, becauſe by theſe a ſtranger may find a ſafe paſſage through the reef quite to the main.

The opening through which they had paſſed, was called Providential Channel; and this bore E. N. E. diſtant ten or twelve miles from the main: on which within was a lofty promontory which was called Cape Weymouth; on the north ſide of which is a bay, which the captain named Weymouth Bay: they lie in latitude 12° 42′ S. lon. 127° 15′ W. Mr. Banks found many curious ſhells, and molluſca; beſides many ſpecies of coral, among which was that called the tubipora muſica.

On the 18th, they anchored in thirteen fathom: the northermoſt of ſome ſmall iſlands ſeen at noon bore W. ½ S. diſtant three miles: are named in the chart Forbes's Iſland, and lie

Digitized by Google

lie about five leagues from the main, which here forms a high point that was called Bolt Head.

The main land within the islands that have been just mentioned forms a point, which was called Cape Grenville: it is in latitude 11° 58′, longitude 217° 38′; and between it and Bolt Head is a bay, which was called Temple Bay. At the distance of nine leagues from Cape Grenville, in the direction of E. ½ N. lie some high islands, which were called Sir Charles Hardy's Isles; and those which lie off the Cape was called Cockburn's Isles.

A point of the main which captain Cook called York Point, lies in latitude 218° 24′ W. the latitude of the north point is 10° 37′, and of the east point 10° 42′ S. To the southward of the Cape the shore forms a large open bay, which was called Newcastle Bay, and contains some small low islands and shoals.

The captain now took possession of the whole eastern coast, from latitude 38° to this place, latitude 10 ½ S. in right of his majesty king George the Third, by the name of New South Wales, with all the bays, harbours, rivers, and islands situated upon it. After the usual ceremony performed upon the island, which was called Possession Island, they reimbarked in their boat.

Qu

Digitized by Google

On the 23d a point of land was called Cape Cornwall. It lies in latitude 10° 43′ S. longitude 219° W. and some low lands that lie about the middle of the passage, were called Wallis's Isles, and bore W. by S. ½ S. distant about two leagues.

Mr. Banks and Capt. Cook landed upon the island, and found it to be almost a barren rock, the haunt of birds, which had frequented it were in such numbers, as to make the surface almost uniformly white with their dung: of these birds, the greater part appeared to be boobies, and the place was therefore called Booby Island. After a short stay, they returned to the ship, and in the mean time the wind had got to the S. W. it was but a gentle breeze, yet it was accompanied by a swell from the same quarter, which, with other circumstances confirmed the captain's opinion that they were got to the westward of Carpentaria, or the northern extremity of New Holland, and had now an open sea to the westward, which was very satisfactory not only because the dangers and fatigues of the voyage were terminating, but because it would no longer remain a doubt whether New Holland and New Guinea were two separate islands, or different parts of the same.

The north east entrance of this passage, is in the latitude of 10° 39′ S. and in the longitude of 218° 36′ W. It is formed by the main,

Digitized by Google

main, or the northern extremity of New Holland, on the S. E. and by a congeries of islands, which were called the Prince of Wales's Islands, to the N. W. and it is probable that these islands extend quite to New Guinea. They differ greatly in height and circuit, and many of them seemed to be well clothed with herbage and wood; and there was no doubt of their being inhabited.

To this channel, or passage, the name of the ship was given, and called Endeavour Streights. Its length from N. E. to S. W. is ten leagues, and it is about five leagues broad, except at the north east entrance, where it is somewhat less than two miles, being contracted by the islands which lie there. That which was called Possession Island is of a moderate height and circuit, and this they left between them and the main, passing between it and two small round islands, which lie about two miles to the N. W. of it. The two small Islands, which were called Wallis's Islands, lie in the middle of the south west entrance, and these they left to the southward.

New Holland, or the eastern coast, now called New South Wales, is of a larger extent than any other country in the known world, that does not bear the appellation of a continent: the length of the coast along which they sailed, reduced to a strait line, is no less than twenty-seven degrees of latitude, amounting to near

Digitized by Google

near two thouſand miles, ſo that its ſquare ſurface muſt be larger than all Europe. To the ſouthward of 33 or 34, the land in general is low and level; farther northward it is rather barren than fertile, yet the riſing ground is chequered by woods and lawns, and the plains and vallies are in many places covered with herbage: the ſoil however is frequently ſandy, and many of the lawns are rocky and barren, eſpecially to the northward, where, in the beſt ſpots, vegetation is leſs vigorous than in the ſouthern part of the country; the trees are not ſo tall, nor is the herbage ſo rich. The graſs in general is high, but thin, and the trees, where they are largeſt, are ſeldom leſs than forty feet aſunder; nor is the country inland, as far as could be examined, better cloathed than the ſea coaſt. The banks of the bays are covered with mangroves, a mile within the beach, under which the ſoil is a rank mud, and always overflowed by a ſpring tide; farther in the country they ſometimes met with a bog, upon which the graſs was very thick and luxuriant, and ſometimes with a valley, that was cloathed with underwood: the ſoil in ſome parts ſeemed to be capable of cultivation, but the far greater part is ſuch as can admit of no improvement. The coaſt, to the northward of 25° S. abounds with fine bays and harbours, where veſſels may lie in perfect ſecurity from all winds.

Of trees there is no great variety. Of thoſe that could be called timber, there are but two ſorts;

Digitized by Google

ſorts; the largeſt is the gum tree, which grows all over the country: it has narrow leaves, not much unlike a willow; and the reſin, which it yields, is of a deep red, and reſembles the ſanguis draconis; probably it may be the ſame, for this ſubſtance is known to be the produce of more than one plant. The other timber tree is that which grows ſimilar to our pines, and has been particularly deſcribed in the account of Botany Bay. Here are alſo trees covered with a ſoft bark that is eaſily peeled off, and is the ſame that in the Eaſt-Indies is uſed for the caulking of ſhips.

Beſides theſe ſpecies of the palm, and mangroves, there were ſeveral ſmall trees and ſhrubs altogether unknown in Europe; particularly a fig tree whoſe fruit was very indifferent. Another that bore what was called a plum, which it reſembled in colour, but not in form, being flat on the ſides; and a third that bore a kind of purple apple; which, after it had been kept a few days, became eatable, and taſted like a damaſcene.

A great variety of plants are here to be met with to increaſe the collection of a botaniſt, but very few of them are of the eſculent kind.

Moſt of the fruits have been already mentioned. One in the ſouthern part, is of the reſemblance of a cherry, except that the ſtone was ſoft; and another not unlike a pine-apple

in

Digitized by Google

in appearance, but of a very disagreeable taste, which is found in the East-Indies, and is called by the Dutch pin appel Boomen.

To the quadrupeds already mentioned can only be added a kind of polecat, which the natives call quoll; the back is brown, spotted with white, and the belly entirely white.

There are many kinds of batts, particularly one already observed, which was larger than a partridge, and was supposed to be the same as Buffon has described by the name of roufet or rouget.

The sea and other water-fowl consist of gulls, shaggs, soland geese, or gannets, of two sorts; boobies, noddies, curlieus, ducks, pelicans of an enormous size, and various others. The land-birds, are beautiful crows, parrots, paroquets, cockatoos, and other birds of the same kind; pigeons, doves, quails, bustards, herons, cranes, hawks, and eagles. The pigeons fly in numerous flocks, whereby they are easily shot.

There are serpents of various kinds, some noxious, and some harmless; scorpions, centipedes, and lizards. There are but few insects. The principal are the musquito, and the ant. Of the ant there are several sorts; some are as green as a leaf, and live upon trees, where they build their nests of various sizes. These

Digitized by Google

nests are of a very curious structure: they are formed by bending down several of the leaves, and gluing the points of them together in the form of a purse; the viscus used for this purpose is an animal juice, which they produce. The gentlemen in gratifying their curiosity were very much stung.

There is another kind entirely black, and their operations and manner of life are not less extraordinary. They inhabit the inside of the branches of a tree, which they contrive to excavate by working out the pith almost to the extremity of the slendereſt twig, without damaging the tree.

There was a third kind found in the root of a plant, which grows on the bark of trees like misletoe, and which they had perforated. This root is commonly as large as a turnip; when the gentlemen cut it, they found it intersected by innumerable winding passages, all inhabited by these animals, by which however the vegetation of the plant did not appear to have been injured. They never cut one of these roots that was not filled with them, though some were not larger than a hazle-nut. These animals are very small, not more than half as big as our common red ant. They have stings, but scarcely strength enough to exert them; they have, however a power of tormenting, in an equal, if not a greater degree; for the moment they handled the root, these insects swarmed

Digitized by Google

swarmed from innumerable apertures, and assailing those parts of the body that were uncovered, produced an itching more intolerable than pain, except when very violent. Rumphius has also given an account of this bulb and its inhabitants, vol. vi. p. 120. where he speaks of another sort that are black.

A fourth kind was found which are perfectly harmless, and almost exactly resemble the white ants in the East Indies; the construction of these is still more curious than that of the former. They have habitations of two sorts, one is suspended on the branches of trees, and the other built upon the ground; those upon the trees are about three or four times as big as a man's head, are formed of a brittle substance, that appears to consist of small parts of vegetables blended together with a glutinous matter, which their bodies supply; upon breaking this crust, innumerable cells, swarming with them, present themselves in a great variety of directions, all communicating with each other, and with several apertures that lead to other nests upon the same tree: they have also one large avenue or covered way, leading to the ground, and being afterwards subterraneous, communicate to the other house there. This house is generally at the root of a tree, but not of that upon which are their other abodes: it is in form like an irregular cone, and is often above six feet high, and nearly as much in diameter. Some are smaller, and these are generally flat

Digitized by Google

ſided, and greatly reſemble in figure the ſtones which many of us imagine to be the remains of druidical antiquity. The outſide of theſe is of good clay, about two inches thick; and within are the cells, which have no opening outwards, but communicate only with the ſubterranean way to the habitations on the tree, and to the tree near which they are built, where they aſcend up the root, and ſo up the trunk and branches, under covered ways of the ſame kind as thoſe by which they deſcended from their other dwellings.

The ſea produces a great quantity of fiſh. They are of different ſorts; but, except the mullet, and ſome of the ſhell-fiſh, none of them are known in Europe, moſt of them are eatable, and ſome are very nice. Upon the ſhoals and reef there is great abundance of fine green turtle, and oyſters of different kinds, particularly the rock-oyſter and the pearl-oyſter. There are alſo ſea-crayfiſh, aud crabs. In the rivers and ſalt creeks there are alligators to be found.

The number of inhabitants appears to be very ſmall in proportion to its extent; the ground is entirely uncultivated, and it is probable where the ſea does not afford food, the country is not inhabited.

The only tribe with which they had any intercourſe, they found where the ſhip was careened, conſiſting of one and twenty perſons

Digitized by Google

ſons; twelve men, ſeven women, one boy, and one girl: the women they never ſaw but at a diſtance; for when the men forded the river they were always left behind. The men here, and in other places, were of a middle ſtature, and in general well made, clean limbed, and remarkably vigorous, active, and nimble, and their voices were uncommonly ſoft and effeminate. They are ſo extremely dirty, that it is ſcarcely poſſible to aſcertain their real complexion; but they appear as black as negroes. They burn their beards, not being poſſeſſed of any ſharp inſtruments.

Their principal ornament, being entirely naked, is the bone which they thruſt through the cartilage that divides the noſtrils from each other: this bone is as thick as a man's finger, and between five and ſix inches long, reaching quite acroſs the face, and ſtops up both the noſtrils ſo much, that they are forced to keep their mouths wide open for breath, and ſnuffle ſo when they attempt to ſpeak, that they are ſcarcely intelligible even to each other. The ſeamen, with ſome degree of humour, called it their ſpritſail-yard. They had alſo necklaces made of ſhells, neatly cut and ſtrung together; bracelets of ſmall cord, wound two or three times about the upper part of their arm, and a ſtring of plaited human hair about as thick as a thread of yarn, went round the waiſt. Some of them had alſo gorgets of ſhells hanging round the neck, and reaching acroſs

Digitized by Google

acroſs the breaſt. Their bodies are painted both white and red: the red is uſually laid on in broad patches upon the ſhoulders and breaſt; and the white in ſtripes, ſome narrow, and ſome broad: the narrow over the limbs, and the broad covers the body, in which ſome taſte is diſplayed. The white was alſo laid on in ſmall patches upon the face, and drawn in a circle round each eye. The red appeared to be ochre, but what the white was, could not be aſcertained; it was cloſe grained, ſaponaceous to the touch, and almoſt as heavy as white lead; poſſibly it might be a kind of ſteatites, but not a bit of it could be procured for iveſtigation. They have holes in their ears, but they never wear any thing in them. They ſet ſo great a value upon their ornaments, that they would never part with the leaſt article for any thing that could be offered, which was the more extraordinary as the beads and ribbons were ornaments of the ſame kind, but far ſuperior. They had indeed no idea of traffic, nor could they receive any: they accepted the things that were offered them, but never appeared to underſtand the ſigns when a return was required. The ſame indifference which prevented them from buying what the Engliſh had, prevented them alſo from attempting to ſteal: if they had been more covetous, they would have been leſs honeſt.

They

They ſeemed to have no fixed habitations, for nothing like a town or village was ſeen in the whole country. Their houſes appeared to be formed with leſs art and induſtry than any that had been ſeen, except at Terra del Fuego, and were ſcarce equal to them. At Botany Bay, where they were beſt, they were juſt high enough for a man to ſit upright in; but not big enough for him to extend himſelf in his whole length in any direction: they were built with pliable rods about the ſize of a man's finger, in the form of an oven, by ſticking the two ends into the ground, and then covering them with palm leaves, and broad pieces of bark: the door was only a large hole at one end, oppoſite to which the fire was made. Here they ſleep, but with their heels up to their head; and in this poſition one of them will hold three inmates. To the northward, where the climate became warmer, theſe ſheds were ſtill ſlighter: they were built in the ſame manner, but none of them were more than four feet deep, and one ſide was left open: the cloſe ſide was always oppoſed to the wind, and oppoſite to the open ſide was the fire, as a defence from the muſquitos. They erect theſe hovels wherever they find preſent ſuſtenance.

What furniture belongs to theſe dwellings, is a kind of oblong veſſel made of bark, by tying up the two ends with a withy, which not being cut off ſerves for a handle; theſe were

Digitized by Google

were uſed to carry water. They have alſo a little bag, about the ſize of a common cabbage net, which is made by laying threads loop within loop like the knitting uſed of purſes. This bag the man carries looſe upon his back with a ſmall ſtring which paſſes over his head; it uſually contains a lump or two of paint and reſin, ſome fiſh-hooks and lines, a ſhell or two, out of which their hooks are made, a few points of darts, and their common ornaments, which compriſe their greateſt treaſure.

The fiſh-hooks are neatly made, and ſome of them are very ſmall. For ſtriking turtle they have a peg of wood which is near a foot long, and well bearded; this is placed in a ſocket at the end of a ſtaff of light wood, about the thickneſs of a man's wriſt, and near ſeven or eight feet long: to the ſtaff is tied one end of a looſe line about three or four fathom in length, the other end is faſtened to a peg. When they ſtrike the turtle, the peg is fixed into a ſocket, and after it has entered his body, and is thereby retained, the ſtaff flies of and ſerves for a float to trace their victim in; it aſſiſts likewiſe to tire him, till they can overtake him with their canoes, and haul him on ſhore. Their lines are from the thickneſs of a half inch rope to the fineneſs of a hair, and are made of a vegetable ſubſtance which could not be determined.

They

Digitized by Google

Their food is principally fish, though they sometimes contrive to kill the kanguroo, and birds of various kinds; although they are so shy that it was difficult to get within reach of them with a common fowling piece. The yam is their only eatable vegetable.

They do not eat any animal food raw; but having no vessel wherein water can be boiled, they either broil it upon the coals, or bake it in a hole by the help of hot stones, in the same manner as is practised by the inhabitants of the islands of the South Seas.

It was frequently observed that several of them held leaves of some sort constantly in their mouths, as an European does tobacco, and an East Indian beetle: the plant was never seen by any of the captain's people, but when they took it from their mouths; possibly it might be a species of the beetle, but it had however no effect upon the lips or the teeth.

They catch fish only by striking, having no nets, or with a hook and line; except such as they find in the hollows of the shoals and rocks, which are dry at half ebb.

Their manner of hunting the gentlemen had no opportunity to see; but it was conjectured by the notches which they had every where cut in large trees in order to climb them, that they

Digitized by Google

they ſtationed themſelves near the tops of them, and there lay in wait for ſuch animals as might paſs within reach of their lances: and probably in this ſituation they might catch birds.

They produce fire by taking two pieces of dry ſoft wood, one is a ſtick about eight or nine inches long, the other is flat: the ſtick is ſhaped into an obtuſe point at one end, and preſſing it upon the other, they turn it nimbly by holding it between both their hands, then ſhift their hands up, and then move them down upon it, to encreaſe the preſſure. They hereby produce fire in a minute or two, and from the ſmalleſt ſpark they encreaſe it very rapidly. Often the gentlemen have ſeen one of them run along the ſhore, with nothing apparently in his hand, who ſtooping down for a moment, left fire behind him. They had the curioſity to examine one of theſe itinerants when he ſet off, and obſerved him wrap up a ſmall ſpark in dry graſs, which, when he had run a little way, having been fanned by the air, which his motion produced, began to blaze; he then laid it down in a place convenient for his purpoſe, incloſing a ſpark of it in another quantity of graſs, and ſo purſued his journey.

Their weapons are lances or ſpears, which are of different kinds, ſome upon the ſouthern part of the coaſt had four prongs, pointed with

Digitized by Google

with bone, and barbed; the points were alſo ſmeared with a hard reſin, which poliſhed them, and made them penetrate deeper into what they ſtruck. To the northward, the lance has only a ſingle point: the ſhaft is of cane, or the ſtalk of a plant reſembling a bulruſh, very ſtrait and light, and from eight to fourteen feet long, compoſed of various joints, where the pieces are let into each other, and unite together; to this are fitted points of various kinds; ſome are of hard heavy wood, and ſome are the bones of fiſh, they ſaw ſeveral that were pointed with the ſtings of the ſting-ray, of the largeſt kind and barbed with ſeveral ſmaller, faſtened on a contrary direction; the points of wood were alſo ſometimes armed with ſharp pieces of broken ſhells, which were ſtuck in, and at the junctures covered with reſin: the lances that are thus barbed, are very dreadful weapons, for when they take place, they can never be extracted without tearing away the fleſh, or leaving the ſplinters of the bone which forms the beard, behind. Theſe weapons are thrown with great force and dexterity; if deſigned to wound at a ſhort diſtance, ſimply with the hand, but if at the ſpace of forty or fifty yards, with an inſtrument which is called a throwing ſtick. This is a plain ſmooth piece of a hard reddiſh wood, very finely poliſhed, about two inches broad, half an inch thick, and three feet long, with a ſmall knob or hook at one extremity, and a croſs piece about three or four inches long at

Digitized by Google

at the other: the knob at one end is received in a ſmall dent which is made on purpoſe, in the ſhaft of the lance near the point, but from which it eaſily ſlips, upon being impelled forward.

The canoes here are rude and ill conſtructed. Some conſiſt of nothing more than a piece of bark, about twelve feet long, tied together at the ends, and kept open in the middle by ſmall bows of wood: yet in a veſſel of this conſtruction Capt. Cook once ſaw three people.

The canoes that were ſeen farther to the northward, are not made of bark, but of the trunk of a tree, hollowed, perhaps by fire. Theſe canoes cannot carry more than four people.

The following difference in the tongues may be agreeable to ſome of our Readers.

Engliſh.	New Holland.	Engliſh.	New Holland.
The head	Wageegee	*Nails*	Kulke
Hair,	Moyre	*Sun*	Gallan
Eyes	Meul	*Fire*	Meanang
Ears	Melea	*A ſtone*	Walba
Lips	Yembe	*Sand*	Yowall
Noſe	Bonjoo	*A rope*	Gurka
Tongue	Unjar	*A man*	Bama
Beard	Wallar	*A male turtle*	Poinga
Neck	Doomboo	*A female*	Mameingo
Nipples	Cayo	*A canoe*	Marigan
Hands	Marigal	*To paddle*	Pelenyo
Thighs	Coman	*Sit down*	Takai

Digitized by Google

English.	New Holland.	English.	New Holland.
Navel	Toolpoor	*Smooth*	Mier Carrar
Knees	Pongo	*A dog*	Cotta, *or* Kota
Feet	Edamal	*A loriquet*	Perpere, *or* pierpier
Heel	Kniorror	*Blood*	Garmbe
Cockatoo	Wanda	*Wood*	Yocou
The foal of the foot	Chumal	*The bone in the nose*	Tapool
Ankle	Chongurn	*A bag*	Charngala
Arms	Aco, *or* Acol	*A great cockle*	Moingo
Thumb	Eboorbalga	*Cocos, yams,*	Maracuto
The fore, middle and ring fingers	Egalbaiga		
The little finger	Nakil, *or* Eboornakil	Cherr	*Expressions as we supposed, of admiration, which they continually used when they were in company with us.*
The sky	Kere, *or* Kearre	Cherco	
A father	Dunjo	Yarcaw	
A son	Jumurre	Tut, tut, tut, tut,	

As from this period the ENDEAVOUR made the usual course, and touched only at Batavia, the Cape of Good Hope, and such other places as have been already described, without making any new discoveries either in Art or Nature; Capt. Cook's voyages from hence may be considered as relating only such dry narrative as is usually to be met with in mariner's journals; therefore we shall avoid repeating it, and here close his voyage of the years 1768, 1769, 1770, and 1771.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Capt. Cook and Capt. Furneaux's second Voyage round the World, in the Years 1772, 1773, 1774, and 1775.

THE former diſcoveries not having determined the important queſtion, which has engaged the attention of many learned and ingenious men for ſome ages, concerning the exiſtence or non-exiſtence of an unknown continent in the ſouthern hemiſphere, his Majeſty projected the preſent voyage to decide this grand object. He propoſed that captain Cook ſhould be accompanied by Mr. Banks, Dr. Solander, Dr. Lind, and Mr. Zoffani, in order to deſcribe and delineate the curioſities of every kind worthy attention. This voyage was not only directed by his Majeſty, but patronized by parliament, the Commons having voted Dr. Lind £4000 for his aſſiſtance.

What induced the above-mentioned gentlemen to abandon the enterprize, even after they had their ſtores on board, which they now ordered to be brought on ſhore, is not eaſily accounted for; unleſs it was the remonſtrance of the pilot, lieutenant, and maſter, by which the Reſolution was declared altogether incapable of bearing a high ſea, or anſwering her helm, and that the pilot would not engage to bring her to Plymouth. She was therefore ordered back to Sheerneſs to be

Digitized by Google

cut down, and the Adventure, commanded by captain Furneaux, ſecond lieutenant of the Dolphin in her ſecond voyage, was ſent round to Plymouth, to wait the arrival of the Reſolution.

It having been aſſerted, that former diſappointments were owing to the commanders being too ſtrictly confined by their inſtructions, his Majeſty commanded the lords of the admiralty to iſſue a more extenſive commiſſion to captain Cook, and in caſe of death, to his ſucceſſor, to purſue at diſcretion the object in view.

The captain being allowed to ſuperintend the victualling and providing the veſſels with all manner of neceſſaries for a three years voyage, every thing went on with great expedition, and Mr. John Reinhold Foſter, and his Son were appointed inſtead of Dr. Lind, with the parliamentary encouragement.

On the 13th of July 1772, both ſhips ſailed from Plymouth, and on the 20th, came in ſight of Cape Finiſterre, bearing W. S. W. ſeven or eight leagues diſtant.

The 22d they ſaw two Spaniſh men of war, one of which fired two ſhot at the Adventure; but on being told they were king's ſhips, made a polite apology, and wiſhed them a proſperous voyage.

The

Digitized by Google

The 28th at night, they anchored in Madeira road, where the captains and commiſſioned officers, and many of the petty officers and private men furniſhed themſelves with a ſtock of wine for their future uſe during the voyage; and having alſo filled their empty water caſks, proceeded on their voyage with a pleaſant gale.

The 1ſt of Auguſt they loſt ſight of Madeira, and on the 4th were in ſight of the pleaſant iſland of Palma.

The 8th they croſſed the Tropic of Cancer, in lat. 23 deg. 30 min. N. long. 19 deg. 11 min. W. and ſaw the iſland of Bonaviſta, bearing S. W. by W. ſix or ſeven miles.

The 12th at five in the morning they paſſed the iſle of May, and at two caſt anchor in Port a Priege bay in the iſland of St. Jago, when they ſaluted the governor with eleven guns. Here both ſhips were ſupplied with excellent water, and live ſtock, ſuch as hogs, goats, and poultry. This iſland is exceeding plentiful, notwithſtanding the inhabitants are miſerably poor, owing doubtleſs to the exactions of their governors.

The 14th about ten at night both ſhips weighed anchor, and proceeded on their voyage to the Cape of Good Hope, where, on

Digitized by Google

the contrary, the inhabitants are almoſt all rich, through that ſteady perſeverance ſo remarkable in the Dutch.

In this long run, the Reſolution loſt the carpenter's mate, who unfortunately fell overboard and was drowned; and the Adventure two very hopeful young officers, Mr. John Limbrich, and Mr. Samuel Kemp, midſhipmen, by death.

The 30th of Auguſt both ſhips anchored in Table Bay, where they were joined in a few days by a French veſſel from Mauritius, and two Dutch ſhips from Middleburgh, who had loſt no leſs than 200 men, in this paſſage of four months.

The old Dutch Governor, who is one of the politeſt, and at the ſame time the moſt friendly man in the world, received the captains with great hoſpitality. He gave them a general invitation to his table during their ſtay at the Cape, and before their departure, he did them the honour to dine on board the Reſolution.

Both ſhips having compleated their ſtock of proviſions, conſiſting chiefly of pickles of various ſorts, which were found of great uſe on board the Reſolution, in preventing the effects of the ſcurvy; bread, eſteemed the beſt that can be purchaſed for long voyages; beef, which

Digitized by Google

which, considering the warmth of the climate, is cured to admiration; and arrack, brandy, and spirits, than which there are none better.

The vessels being cleansed and smoaked, and the men in high spirits, all but lieutenant Shanks, of the Adventure, who desired leave to return home, on the 22d of November 1773, both ships took their departure from the Cape. The following promotions took place in the Adventure, occasioned by the resignation of lieutenant Shanks, the 2d Lieut. Mr. Kemp, being promoted to be 1st lieutenant, and Mr. Burney, midshipman, to be 2d lieutenant.

The 28th, in latitude 40 deg. 55 min. S. long. 12 deg. 6 min. E. it began to blow a storm, but as the wind stood fair, both ships continued to keep company.

December the 4th, being in lat. 43 deg. 14 min. S. long. 16 deg. 23 min. E. the ships company of the Adventure, were put to two-thirds allowance of bread. Both ships continued their course to the southward, and being already as far south, as any ship had ever yet sailed in that quarter, all beyond was utterly unknown.

The 10th discovered two islands of ice, which they took to be land, but were soon convinced of their mistake. Lat. 49 deg. 39. min. long. 21 deg. 20 min. E. On

Digitized by Google

On the 22d they first observed flocks of penguins hovering about the ice islands, which were so numerous, that it was very difficult to avoid them. Some appeared to be three or four miles in circumference; but by far the greatest number resembled heaps of ruins. Many of the officers diverted themselves with shooting penguins, while the sailors had no less pleasure in eating them, though they are very rank food. Certainly short allowance and salt provisions are the best remedies for delicate stomachs; for the officers could soon eat penguins as well as the men. Lat. 54 deg. 52 min. long. 29 deg. 1 min. E.

The 26th they were almost every where surrounded with islands of ice. The crews of both ships were in perfect health, but the fatigue of constantly luffing up, and bearing away to avoid being dashed to pieces, was not borne without complaints. This distress was augmented by their water being so bad, which they had taken in St. Jago, that they were obliged to melt the pieces of loose ice, to supply its place. This was most severe duty, as the men were obliged to plunge their arms into the water in order to get their hands under them to obtain a purchase, whereby their arms in a very short space of time appeared like icicles, and became so numbed as for the present to be totally incapable of use; yet the men would relieve each other, when commanded on this grievous service, with as much alacrity,

Digitized by Google

alacrity, as if it had been only to take their turn at the nightly watch. Lit. 61° 35′ lon. 33° 26′ E.

The weather proving moderate between the 1ſt and the 12th of January 1773, they had gathered ſuch a quantity of ice, as when melted in the coppers, filled all the empty caſks with the beſt water they had taſted ſince they left England.

January 14, they croſſed the Antartic circle, and the iſlands of ice began to increaſe in ſize, but diminiſh in number. The ſun now ſhewed himſelf about 12 at night, and as they advanced, the ſtars diſappeared, and the ſun continued to cheer them with his light till their return again to the ſame latitude; but to their great mortification the iſlands of ice which had hitherto afforded them a paſſage, were converted into whole fields.

January 17, being in lat. 67° 10′ S. and in lat. 38° 29′ E. they found their paſſage totally ſhut up, and were obliged to change their courſe firſt to the north-weſtward and then to the north-eaſtward. They were now within 13 or 14 degrees as far to the ſouthward as that part of the northern hemiſphere, where commodore Phipps was ice-bound the following year, and where his eſcape was very providential. As they knew of no land within a thouſand miles of them, and having neither cloathing

Digitized by Google

cloathing nor provisions proper to winter in a remote and rigorous region, and no hope to support them in such deplorable circumstances of meeting with any accidental relief from the appearance of any other ship at sea, where no ship had ever attempted to navigate before; it would not have been courage, but fool-hardiness to have proceeded when every appearance was against them; neither would it have answered any other purpose than gratifying idle curiosity, to have discovered a continent beyond the 68th degree of latitude, where no European ever could have settled. On Jan. the 17th, therefore captain Cook made a signal to his consort to tack, and to steer north-westward. In this course many interruptions happened, hard gales came on, the seas shortened, the ships by straining became leaky, the rigging by being frozen was continually snapping in one part or other, and it was with the utmost difficulty the ships could keep company.

Jan. 29, being in latitude 52° 28′ longitude 54° 4′ E. a violent storm arose, which separated them, as it was then believed, for ever. The storm was accompanied with a prodigious fall of rain, the sea rose to a tremendous height, and broke over the ships bows to the height of the yard arms. The Adventure, after endeavouring in vain to recover the Resolution, had no other means of again meeting with her, but at the appointed rendezvous in Charlotte-Bay, on the island of New-Zealand.

Digitized by Google

land. However ſhe kept the ſeas in the moſt terrible weather that any ſhip could poſſibly endure. In this cruiſe, they traverſed from latitude 48° to 45° S. and from longitude 36° to 146° during the whole month of February, and part of March, when their water being nearly exhauſted, they were reduced at laſt to the ſcanty allowance of a quart per man a day.

March 1, having made no diſcovery of land in all this miſerable traverſe, they reſolved to ſteer to Van Dieman's land, to water, and repair their ſhattered rigging.

March 9, they came in ſight of that iſland, bearing E. by N. diſtance about eight leagues, the weather being much warmer, and the ſea calm.

On the 10th they got within three miles of a fine bay, which they believed to be Henry Frederick's Bay, and under that miſtake hoiſted out the large cutter, and ſent her to examine the ſoundings for anchorage, and to endeavour to find a watering-place. About noon the boat returned, after finding both wood and water, but the latter was far from being of the beſt. There was ſafe anchorage, but they had ſeen none of the natives, nor ſigns of any; and the country appeared to be uninhabited, or at leaſt uncultivated. The captain making a virtue of neceſſity, came to, and moored the ſhip.

Digitized by Google

The 12th the boats were all manned, and a guard of marines ſent on ſhore to protect thoſe that were employed in cutting wood and filling water. They found trees of an incredible height and ſize, the bodies of which were ſo large, that ſix men with their arms ſtretched at full length could ſcarce incircle them; that they were of a proportionable height; that ſome of them roſe more than a hundred feet high; that the common height was from eighty to ninety feet, all ſtraight, without a limb breaking out; and that but a few, ſhewed the leaſt ſigns of decay.

On the 13th and 14th different parties were employed in wooding and watering; the gentlemen in reconnoitering the country; and the carpenters, caulkers, ſailmakers, and riggers, in repairing the damages the ſhip had ſuſtained.

At nine in the morning of the 15th, they took their departure from the bay, which they now named the Adventure's Bay, as it did not appear that any European veſſel had ever before anchored there. Latitude 43° 23′ S. longitude 147° 37′ E.

Though they had not ſeen any of the natives, yet as they coaſted along ſhore, they obſerved many fires in the night, and ſome cultivated fields in the day.

The

Digitized by Google

The 19th they loſt ſight of this iſland, and ſtretched to the north eaſtward for New Zealand, in hopes of finding the Reſolution.

The 22d they met with a hard gale, attended with thunder, lightning, and rain, which continued the greateſt part of the day, but abated the next, and fine weather ſucceeded, which continued during the remainder of the month.

April 1, the weather began to alter; freſh breezes came on, the rains poured plentifully down, which continued, with a few intervals of fair weather, till they came to New Zealand.

April 3, at ſix in the morning, the man from the maſt head, called out, land, which proved to be the land between Rock Point and Cape Farewell, ſo named by captain Cook on his return from his former voyage.

On the 8th they moored ſhip a cable each way in ten fathom water. They immediately manned the large cutter, and ſent her to examine whether any tokens of the commodore's arrival at that harbour were to be diſcovered. The boat returned with intelligence that there did not appear the leaſt ſign of any ſhip having been there from the time of the Endeavour's departure in 1770 to the preſent hour: they therefore prepared to ſend the tents aſhore to be pitched under a proper guard, for the ac-

Digitized by Google

commodation of the ſick. Great quantities of fiſh were taken, which proved of great ſervice in recovering the ſick.

On the 9th there appeared alongſide the ſhip three canoes, with 15 Indians of both ſexes, all armed with battle-axes, and other offenſive weapons made of hard wood in the form of ſpontoons, about four feet in length, but neither bows nor arrows. The men had beſides javelins or ſpears between 20 and 30 feet long, made of the ſame hard wood as their battle-axes. They had a mat wrapt round their ſhoulders, and tied about their middles with a girdle made of graſs. Both men and women had a moſt ſavage appearance. The captains and officers made them preſents, and by ſigns invited them to trade; they accepted the preſents, and ſome of them took courage and came upon deck. Several of the ſailors went down into their canoes, in one of which they diſcovered the head of a man, which by its bleeding ſeemed to be freſh. The Indians in the canoe inſtantly removed it out of ſight, and thoſe on board obſerving the diſcovery, left the ſhip with viſible marks of diſpleaſure.

The 12th, the weather continuing fair, the captain and officers were going aſhore, when about nine in the morning no leſs than ten canoes came paddling down the ſound. They counted 120 natives of both ſexes, all of them armed as before. The captain not liking their countenance,

countenance, gave orders, that a few only ſhould be admitted on board at a time; and even theſe behaved ſo rudely that the ſailors were obliged to fire a great gun over their heads, which was the only thing that intimidated them. Being thus reduced to order, the people on board exchanged ſeveral trifling articles with the Indians for their battle axes, ſpears, weapons of various ſorts, fiſh-hooks, and other manufactures of the country. On their departure, however, the captain and officers made preſents to thoſe among them who appeared to be chiefs, which they accepted with great ſatisfaction.

During the remainder of the month, when the weather was fair, parties of the natives came every day to traffic; the women were permitted to bring their trade on board, and a friendly intercourſe ſeemed to be eſtabliſhed on both ſides. The ſick recovered faſt, the men were permitted by turns to go aſhore, but the main buſineſs of providing wood and water for continuing the voyage, of repairing the damage the ſhip had received, and of over-hawling the rigging, airing the powder, ſhifting the ballaſt, ſmoaking and cleanſing the ſhips-hold, and between decks; theſe were matters of moment that were unremittingly attended to.

It was now more than three months ſince the Adventure loſt ſight of the Reſolution. On the 18th of May, however, ſhe was ſeen, to the

Digitized by Google

great joy of the ſpectators, at Jackſon's-Point, and at ſeven at night ſhe came and moored juſt by the Adventure. The pleaſure the ſhips companies felt at their meeting can only be conceived by thoſe who have been themſelves in like circumſtances. The reader, however, is already acquainted with the progreſs of the Adventure; what happened to the Reſolution remains to be related.

The ſhips parted company in a hard gale on the 29th of January, in latitude 52° 28 S. and in longitude 54° 4 E.

Their inſtructions were, it appears, to examine the ſeas to the ſouthward of Dieman's-Land and New-Zealand, from W. to E. as far as they were practicable; and for that purpoſe having ſailed ſo far to the ſouthward as to aſcertain with certainty the non-exiſtence of any continent, as far as the 68th degree of latitude in a ſoutherly direction from the Cape of Good Hope; they then changed their courſe to the north-eaſtward till they arrived in the 50th deg. of S. latitude, when they again altered their courſe, ſteering eaſtward as long as they could keep the ſea.

It would be a repetition of the Adventure's diſtreſſes to particularize the effects of the boiſterous weather that were felt by the crew of the Reſolution on this traverſe. But by obſerving the ſtricteſt diſcipline from the higheſt to

Digitized by Google

to the loweſt, the captain's commands were duly obſerved, and punctually executed. When the ſervice was hard, he tempered the ſeverity of it by frequently relieving thoſe employed in the performance, and perſevering in a ſteady line of conduct, he preſerved their health, and was enabled to keep the ſea till reduced to a very ſcanty portion of water. He then found it neceſſary to direct his courſe to Charlotte Sound, the place appointed, as has been obſerved, for the ſhips to rendezvous in caſe of ſeparation, but was not able to effect his purpoſe.

On the 22d of March however, having ſeen no land from the 22d of November, when he left the Cape, he came in ſight of the ſouthernmoſt part of New Zealand, that iſland being divided in the middle by a narrow ſound giving name to the harbour appointed for the place of rendezvous.

The 25th they made land; but the wind proving contrary, and finding in the morning the impoſſibility of bearing down to Charlotte Sound, the captain gave orders to ſteer to Duſkey Bay, ſo named in his former voyage, ſituate between the 45th and 46th degrees of ſouth latitude, in which the whole navy of England might ride in ſafety. In this bay they found a harbour ſo bold, that they ran cloſe in ſhore, and ſteadied the ſhip by dropping an anchor ſhort, and faſtening a large bow-line to a tree

Digitized by Google

on the land. A party was immediately ſent out to fiſh, who ſoon returned with enough for a meal for the whole ſhip's company.

On the 26th the ſmall cutter was ſent out properly armed, in ſearch of a convenient place to wood and water: and having diſcovered a cove in which there was a fine run of water, and wood enough to ſupply a fleet, they ſhifted their ſtation, and moored the ſhip in that cove ſo near the ſhore, that for an eaſy communication with the land they erected a temporary ſtage, one of the chief ſupports of which grew right out from the beach.

On the 27th an Indian canoe, with four or five came to the mouth of the cove, juſt peeped in to look at the ſhip, and haſtily departed.

After dinner, captain Cook, accompanied by Mr. Foſter, and attended by ſome of his officers, having ordered out the cutter, followed the Indians and ſoon diſcovered their habitation, which however they had deſerted. It was a wretched hut compoſed of the bark and boughs of trees; in it they found a fiſh ready roaſted, wrapped up in leaves, and a net with which the fiſh was caught.

On the 28th a tent was erected for the coopers to cleanſe and repair the water caſks.

The 29th a forge was erected on ſhore for the armourer's uſe. All hands, but ſuch as had

Digitized by Google

had leave to fish or kill game, were bufied in different tasks about the ship, and as none of the natives appeared, the captain employed part of every day in surveying the harbour, and Mr. Foster in searching the mountains and plains for ores and plants.

April 3, as the captain, attended only by the boats crew, was taking his survey as usual, he saw an aged Indian upon a point of land that overlooked the sea, waving a bough, as an invitation for the boat to approach the shore. The captain, though totally unprepared for resistance, was yet under no apprehensions of mischief from the friendly appearance of the old man; he therefore ordered the boat's crew to land him without a companion, when the Indian came forward, and saluted him by grasping him by the arms, and pressing him face to face. He was accompanied by a young woman, armed with a kind of spear full eighteen feet long, and by two elderly women, with three or four children. They were all habited nearly alike. Their shining black hair, was tied in a knot upon the crowns of their heads. The old man made signs as if he wanted to know from what country the strangers came, and what was their intent; the captain pointed to the heavens, intimating that they had sailed more than double the space of all that wide expanse, that they had travelled with the sun, and came from that region where the sun lay hid o'nights. He informed him likewise,

Digitized by Google

likewiſe, that they came there only to refreſh and to repair their veſſel, and that they had with them ſome goods of the manufacture of their country, which they would gladly exchange for what things were in common uſe in his. The captain then invited them to the boat, which they refuſed, and, in his turn, the old Indian pointed to the border of a wood, and taking hold of the captain's arm, offered to conduct him thither, which the captain likewiſe declined. This interview, which was very friendly, it was hoped, would have been the means of eſtabliſhing an intercourſe between the neighbouring Indians and the ſhip's company. Fear prevented this interview from having the deſired effect: for very few of them appeared in ſight for many days after the ſhip was moored, and thoſe who were obſerved only ſeemed to ſnatch as it were a ſight of the ſhip, and to retire into the woods immediately. In the mean time great pains were taken to prevail with the old man and his family to come on board the ſhip, but it was afterwards diſcovered that ſome ceremonies were wanting to ratify the peace. The Indian had brought his green bough, and preſented it to the captain, but the captain had omitted to preſent a green bough in return. The next time the captain went a ſurveying, he placed himſelf in full view of the Indians place of abode, and, the old man came again to the ſea ſide. The captain having prepared a bough, waved it in the boat, and immediately rowed to land. The Indian

on

Digitized by Google

on his landing embraced him, and having a bough in his hand, made a long ſpeech, delivered with ſuch grace and dignity, as would have done honour to an European orator. They then exchanged their boughs, and the old man made great profeſſions of friendſhip.

The old man now viſited the ſhip without fear; and Mr. Foſter, and thoſe who were curious, had frequent opportunities of ſeeing and converſing with the family, if that may be called converſing, when neither party underſtood each other.

The old man at firſt was attended only by one daughter, who was young and lively. The captain received him with great cordiality, and the Indian ſeemed highly delighted, inſpecting and admiring every thing that was ſhewn him; both he and his daughter were invited to eat, but they declined that civility. Of all the arts the Indian ſaw the people employed about on board, none ſeemed to ſtrike him ſo much as the facility with which the ſawyers cut out their plank from the ſolid tree.

Having ſpent moſt part of the day in gratifying his curioſity, and the daughter being no leſs delighted than her father with the attention that had been paid her, it drawing towards eveining, they both took leave and departed.

After

Digitized by Google

After ſome time it was diſcovered, that this family was the ſame, who at the firſt coming of the ſhip, deſerted their habitation on the ſhore, and betook themſelves to the covert of the woods. On this part of the iſland, which was the moſt ſoutherly, and conſequently the coldeſt and moſt unpromiſing, the inhabitants were but few, and lived in continual terror from their northern countrymen, who if they can take them by ſurprize, carry them off in like manner as the ſavage beaſts of the foreſt carry off their prey when impelled by hunger. This very naturally accounts for the deſerted condition in which our voyagers found this part of the country; for though it abounded in fiſh, it was deſtitute of every other neceſſary of life, wood and water excepted. There were neither fowls nor animals, except ſea-fowls, of which laſt the natives were not dexterous enough to avail themſelves, and they had no other means of ſupplying their want of bread, but by bruiſing the inner rind of a certain tree, and roaſting it to eat with their fiſh.

Monday 19, the captain and Mr. Foſter, viſited the old man and his family at their new habitation on the ſkirt of the wood, and were welcomed by them in a very hoſpitable manner. In a little time, they all appeared clean dreſſed in their manner, a fire was made by rubbing two ſticks together, and they began dreſſing fiſh in a pecuiiar manner, entirely different from that eaten in common by themſelves.

Digitized by Google

ſelves. Having prepared the fire, they made a kind of bag of broad-leaved ſea-weed, in which they placed a fiſh about the ſize of a ſmall cod: this fiſh thus incloſed, they placed upon a kind of ſtage made of hard wood in the nature of a grid-iron, and underneath they ſupplied live-coals, till the fiſh within became brown as if baked in an oven; and then they offered it to the ſtrangers in clean leaves gathered freſh from the trees. The gentlemen declined eating, but were much pleaſed with the neatneſs of their cookery; many of the ſailors, however, were not ſo dainty, they not only eat with them a-days, but ſlept with them a-nights.

Tueſday 20, the gentlemen being at a conſiderable diſtance from the ſhip, obſerved a company of Indians, who ſeemed to be more courageous than the family they have juſt deſcribed. Theſe were armed after the manner of their northern countrymen, and threatened hoſtilities by brandiſhing their lances. The captain jumped aſhore with only a white ſheet of paper in his hand, and after narrowly eſcaping being ſtruck with a lance which was thrown at him by a young warrior, continued advancing till he reached a tree, from whence having broken a bough, he made towards the natives, who were but few in number, and who ſeemed in a great meaſure to have vented their rage in the firſt attack. They met him with boughs which they dropped at his feet,

Digitized by Google

and he inſtantly dropped his upon theirs. Peace being thus concluded, the captain made preſents to the women of ſuch trifles as they were moſt likely to be pleaſed with, and invited them to follow him to the pinnace, and they in return made ſigns for him and his followers to go with them.

At another iſland more Indians were diſcovered, but the pinnace being at a conſiderable diſtance from the ſhip, the captain gave orders to ſteer for the cove.

Nothing remarkable happened till the 26th. The people continued to prepare for ſailing; and in the mean time the brewers were ſet to work to brew beer for the ſhip's uſe. This, it ſeems, was ſtrongly recommended by Mr. M'Bride as a preſervative againſt the ſcurvy, and there is no doubt but it contributed, with the other means that were uſed, to produce that ſalutary effect.

On the 28th the tents on ſhore were ſtruck, the wood that had been cut brought on board, and the water properly ſtowed in the hold; the ſails all bent, the ſhip unmoored, and all but the captain, and thoſe who accompanied him, called to their ſtations.

The 29th the ſhip was towed a-head, and at four in the afternoon was under ſail with a fine breeze. At five it fell calm, and at ſeven, there being

Digitized by Google

being no likelihood of advancing, came to, and anchored in 50 fathom water. At night they saw a fire at a diſtance.

On the 30th weighed, and ſailed about eleven o'clock; but the wind dying away, they again caſt anchor among the iſlands in 42 fathom water. The weather continuing fine, the ſhip's company were plentifully ſupplied with fiſh, and were in high ſpirits, hoping ſoon to meet their aſſociates in the Adventure.

May 1, they weighed anchor; but the breeze proving contrary, they ſtretched from ſhore to ſhore without making any conſiderable way, and in the evening caſt anchor in a little cove. Here they catched abundance of fiſh, and killed ſome water-fowl. The ſhore was ſo bold, that in turning into the cove the enſign-ſtaff was entangled among the trees.

May 5, weighed and came to ſail, and arrived at a convenient birth not above four ſhort miles from the main ocean.

The 6th at night they had a ſtrong gale, attended with thunder, lightning, and hail.

The 11th they weighed anchor, and got clear of the bay, to which the captain in his former voyage had given the name of Duſky Bay. The north point of this bay is rendered remarkable by five high peaked rocks which lie

Digitized by Google

off, and give it the appearance of the four fingers and thumb of a man's hand. The harbour lies considerably within land, in latitude 45° 47′ S. and in longitude 193° 17′ W.

Little can be said of the inhabitants of this part of New Zealand, as the family already described was the only one with which the ships held any intercourse. There were certainly other inhabitants, but not in considerable numbers. In some parts the captain found them fierce and bloody, hostile, and irreconcileable; in other places friendly, and ready to enter into traffic; at a distance from these the people they saw seemed indifferent and numerous, scarce thinking it worth while to suspend their ordinary employments but for a moment to take notice of the uncommon structure of so rare an object as an European ship.

On the 17th, they perceived the western entrance of Charlotte Sound; but to their great astonishment found themselves surrounded with water-spouts, some of them not more than three or four hundred yards from the ship's course. It happened, however, providentially, that none of them broke till the ship had reached the Sound, where she cast anchor about seven at night within two miles distance of her consort, the Adventure, which in the morning she found almost in readiness to sail.

They

Digitized by Google

They had now ranged an unfrequented ſea, from the firſt degree of eaſtern longitude (to which they had returned after directing their courſe to the ſouthward from the Cape of Good Hope) to the 167th degree of the ſame longitude, and having kept beyond the 45th degree of ſouth latitude, and within the diſtance of the 48th without once ſeeing each other, or diſcerning the leaſt appearance of land, it may be affirmed with certainty, that no continent exiſts within thoſe limits, and that all the conjectures and poſitive aſſertions of former navigators, and the reaſoning of geographers and aſtronomers concerning a Terra Incognita Auſtralis, have not the leaſt foundation in truth, but are mere fictions unſupported by facts, and now fully diſproved by uncontrovertible demonſtration.

As the winter was now far advanced in that climate, it became neceſſary to haſten their departure. Both ſhips ſupplied themſelves with as much wild celery and other wholeſome greens as the people could gather, and the ſhips conveniently ſtow. The brewers likewiſe on board the Reſolution made a ſecond brewing; but it does not appear that the Adventure was equally provided with malt.

June 4, they celebrated his Majeſty's birthday with great rejoicings. The marines were drawn up on ſhore, and fired in honour of the day; and the evening concluded with bonfires

Digitized by Google

and fireworks, to the great aſtoniſhment of the Indian beholders.

On the 7th of June both ſhips ſet ſail, ſteering E. S. E. for ſeveral days, till they came into the old courſe between the 47th and 48th degrees of ſouth latitude; but here they found the weather ſo rigorous and intolerably cold, that in latitude 47° 26′ S. longitude 186° 32′ E. they changed their courſe E. by N. which brought them into a warmer climate. This was June 16, the very depth of their winter.

June 24, they found themſelves in latitude 43° 58 S. and on the 27th in latitude 42° 23′ longitude 196° 30 E. in which direction they continued to ſail with little or no variation till the 15th of July, when ſtrong gales came on, and the ſcurvy began to ſhew itſelf on board the Adventure, and in a ſhort time diſabled half her men. In all this long run they never had once ſight of land.

On July the 16th they again changed their courſe E. N. E. till they came into a ſtill milder climate; and on the 20th of July they found themſelves in latitude 31° 34′ and in longitude 222° 16 E.

Auguſt 1, the ſcurvy had prevailed ſo much on board the Adventure, that the men who remained in health were obliged to do double duty: whereas there were but two men ill on board

Digitized by Google

board the Reſolution, one of a conſumption, the other of the rheumatiſm. They were now in lat. 25° 11′ and 226° 57 E. ſailing a weſterly courſe for Otaheite.

The Adventure had loſt her cook by death, and there being no man to be ſpared on board that ſhip, William Chapman, an old ſeaman on board the Reſolution, was appointed in his room.

On the 11th they diſcovered three ſmall low iſlands bearing W. S. W. diſtance about three leagues. They were now in lat. 17° and long. 218° 30′ nearly.

Every day now brought them in ſight of ſmall iſlands, of which Tupia is ſaid to have laid down a plan of more than 100 of his own knowledge, moſt of them within the Tropics.

On the 15th of Auguſt they came in ſight of Otaheite, to their great joy.

On the 16th the current carried them cloſe in ſhore upon a reef of rocks, on which the Reſolution ſtruck ſeveral times, but received no material damage. The Adventure came to with the coaſting anchor, and hoiſted out her boats, and got two ſmall anchors and hawſers to warp her off ſhore; but both hawſers broke, and they loſt both anchors; about ſix in the evening they ſlipt their coaſting cable, and came to ſea with the Reſolution.

Digitized by Google

On the 17th both ſhips anchored in a bay at the north-ſide of the iſland; a great number of the Indians ſurrounded the ſhips on their firſt approaching the ſhore, and when they were made to underſtand that they came from Britain, they cried out for Tupia, Banks, and Solander, their old friends, neither of whom being on board, the captains ſhewed themſelves to the populace, who ſoon remembered them. They brought their boats loaded with fruits, but neither hogs nor fowls.

Tents were now erected, and the ſick people from the Adventure carried on ſhore, who recovered faſt.

While the ſhips continued in this ſtation, which probably was choſen as leſs exhauſted of live-ſtock than that where the Endeavour had lain ſo long in her former voyage, the people were friendly, and ſupplied the ſhips plentifully with fruits; but hogs and poultry were hardly to be purchaſed at any rate, nor indeed were any to be ſeen, except ſuch as were brought in preſents for the captains and gentlemen on board.

The crews of both ſhips had paid the utmoſt obedience to their officers while at ſea, yet here it was hardly practicable with the ſtricteſt diſcipline to reſtrain the exceſſes of the common men, or to keep them to their duty.

The

Digitized by Google

The inhabitants of this iſland have already been ſo fully deſcribed, in a former voyage, that it is unneceſſary to ſay any thing more about them.

Auguſt 21ſt, the ſhips prepared to ſhift their ſtations; and on the 25th caſt anchor in Port Royal harbour, where the Endeavour had formerly been moored for more than three months. Here the chief articles of trade were hatchets, knives, ſciſſars, raſors, combs, looking-glaſſes, all ſorts of nails and iron, white ſtone beads, white ſhirts, &c.

It is remarkable, that the only animals ſeen upon this part of the iſland (a few hogs and dogs excepted) were rats, which ſeemed to be cheriſhed by the inhabitants, who often fed them with fruit, and kept them tame about their houſes.

As ſoon as the ſhips moored in this harbour, all hands were ſet to work in different employments. The aſtronomer's tent and apparatus were ſet up on the ſhore, where the captains of both ſhips chiefly attended. Mr. Foſter went abroad every day in ſearch of new productions; the armourers and carpenters were buſied in repairing, the coopers in cleaning and new-hooping the caſks; the waterers in filling them, and the woodmen in felling wood: in ſhort, every perſon was employed, and

Digitized by Google

and not a moment loſt in fitting out the ſhips for completing their voyage.

On the 1ſt of September, the ſhips being repaired, the water and wood ſtowed on board, the ſick recovered, and the tents ſtruck, about four in the afternoon they unmoored and came to ſail, as it was ſaid no hogs were to be purchaſed; but rather becauſe the ſailors were too much delighted with the place, and ſo much ſmitten with the charms of their miſtreſſes, that it was imagined many would have left the ſhips, had they conceived they were ſo ſoon to depart.

They ſteered with a favourable gale to the N. W. all night.

On the 2d of September, they ſaw Huaheiny, one of the Society Iſles, off which they caſt anchor the ſame night. Early in the morning in working into Owhana Road, the Adventure miſſed ſtays, and backed aſtern upon a reef of rocks on the larboard ſide in going in; but got off with very little damage. They then warped into the bay, and were ſoon joined by the Reſolution.

Strict orders were iſſued in this harbour, that none of the men ſhould trade for hogs or fowls, to prevent the articles which they had on board from ſinking in their value with the natives,

Digitized by Google

natives, as they must have done, if every one had been at liberty to give what he would, and to purchase what number he pleased. Besides, to avoid the confusion that such a market would necessarily produce, the captain appointed purveyors, by whom both ships were plentifully and cheaply supplied.

Mr. Spearman, belonging to the Adventure, having made an excursion into the woods by himself, was set upon by a party of Indians, who, having disarmed, stript and robbed him of his clothes, and things of value, beat him for the resistance he made.

As no blood had been spilt, they were not willing to proceed to extremities, and equally unwilling to suffer the offenders to escape. They therefore contrived to get the King and Queen into their hands, and in the height of their entertainment on board, Mr. Spearman appeared in the miserable condition in which he had been left by the robbers. The captain, pointing to Mr. Spearman, and addressing himself to the royal guests, signified to them, that the gentleman present had been cruelly treated by their people, having lost both his clothes and arms; and insisted that strict search should be immediately ordered for the thieves, and that ample restoration must be made; adding, that they should consent to be his hostages 'till justice was done upon the offenders. Upon this, the robbers were immediately pursued and

Digitized by Google

and taken, and each brought back what had fallen to his ſhare. Being brought on board, in order, as they thought, to ſuffer death, they were bound and ſtript. Juſt as they apprehended the uplifted hand of the executioner, they were releaſed, and preſented to Mr. Spearman, before whom they crouched with very different and inexpreſſible emotions of fear and joy. Mr. Spearman raiſed them up, and preſented them unhurt to their Majeſties, who received them with joy and gratitude, loading the ſhips with preſents after they were releaſed.

The inhabitants of all the Society Iſlands ſeem to be nearly alike in manners, cuſtoms, and diſpoſitions; the women, in particular, are without modeſty, and the men without courage; they have neither the manly boldneſs of the Otaheiteans, nor the ſavage fierceneſs of the New-Zealanders; but are in general an effeminate race, intoxicated with pleaſure, and enfeebled by indulgence.

On the 18th, both ſhips ſet ſail in company; having on board 160 hogs, and a large quantity of bread, and fruit; they had pleaſant weather, and a favourable gale W. S. W.

The 23d, in lat. 19 deg. 6 min. S. and long. 201 deg. 53 min. E. they diſcovered a low ſmall iſland bearing S. W. by S. Courſe W. S. W. wind S. E. At half paſt eleven in the forenoon hauled up, but not finding any entrance, bore away W. S. W, as before.

On

Digitized by Google

On the 29th at noon, they altered their courſe W. half S. lat. 21 deg. 30 min. S.

October 1, the weather ſtill fine, and the courſe W. by S. about two in the afternoon, they ſaw the pleaſant iſland of Middleburgh, diſcovered by Taſman, in 1643, bearing from them about W. by N.

On the 2d, at five in the morning bore away under topſails. At ſix ſet foreſails, and ſteered W. and W. by N. between the large iſle and a ſmall one about three leagues to the ſouthward. Two or three leagues to the eaſtward of this iſland, they perceived land bearing near W. by N. ſix or ſeven leagues diſtant.

They got cloſe under the land at eight in the morning, and anchored in 45 fathom water. In half an hour the Indians ſurrounded them, ſome in canoes, and ſome ſwimming, but one came alongſide the ſhips, bringing in his hand a piece of a root which they uſe as a token of peace, and preſented it to the Captain, who in return made the Indian a ſmall preſent. This he alſo received, and placing it upon his head, ſat down on the quarter-deck, and held it there for the ſpace of half a minute. He wanted much to enter into converſation with the Indian they had on board, but their languages were totally different.

Tupia

Digitized by Google

Tupia muſt have underſtood more languages than one, or he could not have interpreted, the language of the New-Zealanders to Mr. Banks and his aſſociates, more eſpecially as New-Zealand lies at treble the diſtance from Otaheite that theſe iſlands do. The inhabitants of Middleburgh are large and well proportioned. Both men and women wanted one of their little fingers; and Taſman makes a ſimilar remark. They paint their bodies from the waiſt downwards, their hair is black and friz-zled. The men are repreſented as bold and reſolute, armed with clubs of eight or ten pounds weight, and bows and arrows. The country abounds in plenty, and has a moſt beautiful appearance. The natives bartered their fruits for nails, pieces of cloth, and other articles; but no water being to be procured, the captain ſailed next day.

On the 3d, weighed anchor, and put to ſea, directing his courſe S. W. to an iſland about five leagues diſtant, which Taſman named Amſterdam. Here both ſhips caſt anchor and moored.

The natives in great numbers came off daily with hogs, fowls, and variety of fruits, which were purchaſed for trifles.

This iſland is level, of a beautiful green, and abounding with fruit trees of various colours.

Digitized by Google

lours. Here the ſhore is open, free and bold, from 25 to 35 fathom water, with a ſhelly bottom.

The captains were viſited by the chief perſons of the iſland; but when they returned the compliment on ſhore, with a guard of ſoldiers for the greater ſtate, a quarrel enſued, attended with bloodſhed. The natives, like moſt iſlanders in the ſouthern hemiſphere, are great thieves, and not eaſily hindered from ſnatching hats off the head. The Indians even attempted to force the ſoldier's arms from them, and the ſoldiers in the conteſt were in danger of being worſted by numbers. The officers finding no other means of commanding reſpect, ordered one file to fire over the heads of the croud, and the other file to reſerve their fire till the effect of the falſe fire ſhould be known. The Indians deſiſted, but obſerving no miſchief from the uncommon report, renewed their attacks more vigorouſly, when orders were given to fire upon them, by which two were ſhot dead, and others deſperately wounded. The Indians then fled. This put an end to inſults of this kind. The people came afterwards, and traded fairly, bringing hogs in great number, which the common men killed and ſalted, and fowls of a vaſt ſize. Alſo bread-fruit, cocoa nuts in plenty, plantains, and a fruit the crew called ſhaddocks, the ſize of cocoa nuts, in colour and ſmell like lemons, all which they exchanged for trifles.

Digitized by Google

Our voyagers, in ſearch of water, had an opportunity of examining the houſes and plantations of the inland parts of the country, which were much ſuperior to any they had before ſeen in that part of the globe. Their houſes are far more convenient than in the iſlands near the line: they were open indeed on one ſide, and at one end, but every where elſe cloſe covered, and divided into apartments which ſeemed in proportion to the number of the family. The lanes between the houſes in the villages, were ten or twelve feet wide. Behind every houſe was a ſpot of ground a hundred feet long, planted with cocoa-nut trees on the outſide, and with plantains, yams, ſweet potatoes, and other vegetables within.

Between every plantation was a bamboo partition from twelve to ſixteen feet high. Next to theſe were the lawns or fields, whoſe graſs, to the height of eighteen inches, is ever green. They ſpread theſe floors pretty deep with this graſs, and overlay it with very neatly woven mats, on which they ſleep. They always eat in the open air, the maſter of the houſe by himſelf, the wife and children together. They go naked from the middle upwards, both men and women; but gird their waiſts with a curious kind of cloth by a platted girdle, and which hangs in folds almoſt to their knees; the dreſs is the ſame from the peaſant to the king. The women are tall, well-ſhaped, and ſtrong made, and take care of the family buſineſs. Both the

Digitized by Google

the islands Middleburgh and Amsterdam are surprisingly populous: and they have many ingenious implements of art and industry among them.

The voyagers signifying their want of water, the people with much good nature brought them cocoa-nuts, and shewed them how to drink the milk, the only liquor of the natives.

Our voyagers again wanting water to carry on board, the others shook their heads, letting them understand that there was none nearer than two days journey up the country. They therefore dug wells, but that water was not drinkable.

Chastity is no virtue on these islands, for the women, though uninviting, are always willing to gratify strangers. Nevertheless, their domestic affairs seem better regulated than among the other islanders.

The complexion of these islanders, is between a swarthy and black, their features are not amiss, rather small than masculine, their teeth white and even, their eyes small, and their noses something flat, but not in all; their faces are generally round, and their ears large and long; the beards of some appear to be shorn, probably as a mark of distinction among the chiefs.

Digitized by Google

Pieces of linen cloth, white paper, ſcarlet ſhreds, and painted cottons, were the articles of traffic with them. Nails, ſciſſars, knives, beads, and iron in all forms, bore a good price.

Some of their cloth reſembled that of Otaheite, and appeared like paper; another kind, made of India graſs, was very ſtrong, and looked like fine matting; but their baſkets were moſt admired by the voyagers, who thought them inimitable; they are made in a thouſand different ſhapes, and all ſo cloſe and compact, as to hold water as tight as a caſk. Their proas or canoes, are decked at both ends with flat boards; their nets for catching fiſh, fiſh hooks, domeſtic utenſils, their arms, and all their mechanical inventions, are exquiſite for make and poliſh.

The 8th our voyagers ſaw the iſland of Pyliſtaert, diſcovered likewiſe by Taſman, bearing to S. W. diſtance about nine or ten leagues, courſe S. S. W. and S. by W. ſteering for New-Zealand.

The 21ſt they came in ſight of New-Zealand. The Adventure being a great way aſtern, the Reſolution ſhortened ſail, till they joined companies. At ſix paſſed Portland Iſland.

The 22d at five in the morning they made ſail. At ten about eleven leagues to the northward of Charlotte Sound, three canoes came

Digitized by Google

came off, one moſt curiouſly carved from head to ſtern. The figure at the head reſembled a griffin. The chief on board of this canoe held a kind of ſerjeant's halbert, who, after ſome mutual ceremonies came on board, and was ſaluted by the captain of the Reſolution, and the other gentlemen. His head was highly tatowed, and his hair finely ornamented with feathers; and tied after their faſhion in a knot on the top of his head; the feathers of various colours were elegantly plaited all round. He admired the ſtructure of the ſhip, and being ſhewn the cabin, the hold, the gun-room, and the other conveniencies between decks, he next took a ſurvey of the rigging, the maſts, ſails, and ropes, and the dexterous manner of handling them. So many novelties raiſed his aſtoniſhment, which he expreſſed by uncommon geſtures. Upon his deſiring to depart, the captain preſented him with ſome cocks and hens, and gave him alſo a boar and a ſow, and made him underſtand, that if he preſerved them alive, they would run into the woods, and want no attendance, but would breed, and become numerous, and go in companies.

Taking his leave about twelve, to acknowledge his great pleaſure, he began a war ſong, in which he was joined by his attendants, who performed all the motions and geſtures by which they challenge their enemies to fight. At three in the afternoon, the Reſolution be

Digitized by Google

ing three leagues from land, the gale freſhened and ſuddenly ſhifted to the weſt; the ſails being ſet, it preſently carried away the foretop-gallant-maſt, and ſplit the mizzen-top-ſail. All hands were called up, and employed in reefing the top-ſails, taking down the mizzen, and getting another up. Lay off and on all night; but in the morning had parted from the Adventure, and never joined again till their arrival in England.

The 23d the ſhip ſtood in for land. Came on a hurricane, attended with prodigious heavy ſhowers; about nine the wind blew moderate, and the rains ceaſed.

The 30th at eight in the morning it blowed a hurricane from the N. W. At eight Cape Campbell bore N. W. diſtance twelve or thirteen leagues. The ſnowy mountains were ſoon viſible, bearing W. by N. ſix or ſeven leagues diſtance. At noon they were in lat. 24 deg. 14 min. S. with the wind at N. N. W. their courſe W. They were now driven as far to ſouthward of their deſtined port as they had before been labouring northward of it; they began to ſeek ſome harbour to take ſhelter till the gale ſhould ceaſe; but the ſhore was too craggy, the land mountainous, and the hills buried in ſnow. At three they ſounded about ſix miles from the land, and found 35 fathom water.

Nov.

Digitized by Google

Nov. the 1ſt, at ſix in the afternoon, a ſtiff breeze at N. W. Charlotte Sound was not more than ten or eleven leagues diſtant.

The 2d at five in the morning they ſtood in to the Sound with a briſk gale at N. W. by W. to look for a ſafe place to anchor. A little to windward they found a ſmall entrance or bay, and about noon ſtood cloſe into land, and anchored in twelve fathom water, black ſandy clay. Here ſeveral canoes came along ſide, many of the Indians were the ſame who came off from land on the 22d paſt. They brought dried fiſh, and five of them went on board, and had preſents from the captain. To introduce a breed of hogs and poultry upon the iſland, the captain gave them another ſow and boar, and ſome cocks and hens. He alſo gave a parcel of yams, with directions for planting them. About three in the afternoon they weighed, ſteering along ſhore through the Straits, and about eight in the evening anchored in the mouth of Charlotte Sound.

The 3d at five in the morning they weighed and came to ſail; and about eleven moored in a convenient place for wood and water. They were ſoon viſited by ſeveral canoes with fiſh to ſell, which was diſpoſed of very cheap.

The 4th all hands were buſy in getting the tents on ſhore, for the men employed in repairing the ſhip. It may ſeem incredible that a ſhip

Digitized by Google

a ſhip could be toſſed to and fro for twelve or fourteen days together in getting into a ſtrait not leſs in width than the channel that divides England from France; notwithſtanding it was almoſt every day in view, and the utmoſt exertion of ſeamanſhip uſed. Yet ſo the Reſolution was baffled, and the Adventure much worſe.

The 4th the weather became mild, and the Adventure being not many miles from the ſhore, the Indians came off in their canoes with craw-fiſh in plenty, which were ſoon bought up by the ſhip's crew.

The 5th a ſtorm came on, when after many fruitleſs attempts to make Cook's Straits, their water being almoſt ſpent, and the men exhauſted with fatigue, the captain thought proper to make for Talaga-bay, to obtain refreſhments.

The 9th they came a-breaſt of that bay, in lat. 38 deg. 22 min. S. long. 179 deg. E. and at eleven in the forenoon anchored in 12 fathom water. The ſhip had no ſooner moored, than great numbers of the natives came along ſide in their canoes, either to trade or gratify their curioſity. Be this as it may, our voyagers made little ſtay in this harbour, being very ſolicitous to join the Reſolution in order to proſecute the voyage.

The

Digitized by Google

The 10th of November, the boats were manned and ſent on ſhore for a ſupply of wood and water; ſome marines were ordered to guard them from the inſults of the natives. The reſt of the crew were at work about the ſhip, which was then in a moſt ſhattered condition.

From the 16th to the 28th were continual tempeſts, which tore their rigging to pieces, and ſpent the men with fatigue.

The 29th the water being almoſt exhauſted, they were again reduced to the ſmall allowance of a quart per man a day.

The 30th, the weather happily becoming more calm, they made Cook's Straits; and caſt anchor in Charlotte Sound at three in the afternoon.

Their firſt enquiry was, Whether any inſtructions had been left for them by the Reſolution; and a letter was found, implying, that the Reſolution had ſet ſail ſix days before.

On the 1ſt of December the tents were carried on ſhore, the ſick landed, and every preparation was made to recover them and refit the ſhip. The Indians came on board with alacrity, bringing fiſh and what elſe they had to ſell,

Digitized by Google

to ſell, behaving with civility, and trading honeſtly for ſome time.

The 13th a party of them came down in the night, and robbed the aſtronomer's tent of every moveable, and this ſo quietly, that they were not even ſuſpected, till the aſtronomer getting up to take an obſervation, miſſed his inſtruments, and charged the centinel with being the thief. This brought on a pretty ſharp diſpute, when an Indian was ſeen creeping from the tent, and Mr. Bailey fired and wounded him, but he nevertheleſs ran into the woods and eſcaped. His companions at the report of the gun, likewiſe fled into the woods, leaving their boat with their prey in it, a-ground upon the beach.

The 17th while they were preparing for their departure, the large cutter, manned with ſeven ſeamen, under the command of Mr. John Roe, the firſt mate, accompanied by Mr. Woodhouſe, midſhipman, and James Tobias Swilley, the carpenter's ſervant, was ſent up the Sound to Graſs Cove, to gather greens and wild celery.

At two in the afternoon the tents were ſtruck, every thing got on board, and the ſhip made ready for ſailing the next day. Night coming on, and no cutter appearing, the captain and officers expreſſed great uneaſineſs, fearing ſome treachery from the ſavages. They

ſat

Digitized by Google

ſat up the whole night in expectation of her arrival; but in vain.—At day break, the captain ordered the long-boat to be hoiſted out, and double manned, with Mr. Burney, ſecond lieutenant, Mr. Freeman, maſter, the corporal of the marines, with five private men, all well armed, with plenty of ammunition, two wall-pieces, and three days proviſion. About nine in the morning they departed, and rowed and ſailed for Eaſt Bay, keeping cloſe in ſhore, and examining every creek they paſſed, to find the cutter, till two in the afternoon, when they put into a ſmall cove to dreſs dinner. Mean while ſome Indians were obſerved, very buſy on the oppoſite ſhore, upon which they left their dinner, and rowed ſpeedily towards the ſpot where the ſavages were aſſembled. Upon their approach the Indians fled; they followed them cloſely to a little town, which was deſerted, but while they were ſearching their huts, the Indians returned, and made a ſhew of reſiſtance, but ſome trifling preſents being made their chiefs, they were very ſoon appeaſed. However, on their return to the boat, the ſavages again followed them, and ſome of them threw ſtones. After dinner they renewed their ſearch, and at proper intervals kept firing their wall-pieces, as ſignals to the cutter, if any of her people ſhould be within hearing.

They opened a ſmall bay about five in the afternoon, where a body of Indians were hauling a large double canoe up upon the beach. They

Digitized by Google

They quickened their courſe to reach them, but the ſavages fled upon ſeeing them come near, which encreaſed their ſuſpicions. On landing, the firſt thing they ſaw in the canoe, was one of the cutter's row-lock-boards, and a pair of ſhoes tied up together. On advancing up the beach, they found ſeveral of their people's baſkets, and ſaw one of their dogs eating a piece of broiled fleſh, which upon examining they ſuſpected to be human, and found in one of the baſkets a hand, which they knew to be the left hand of Thomas Hill, by the letters T. H. being marked on it, when they were no longer in ſuſpenſe about the event. They purſued the ſavages as far as poſſible, but without ſucceſs. On their return they deſtroyed the canoe, and continued their ſearch. They opened Graſs-Cove at half after ſix in the evening, where they ſaw many Indians on the beach, and ſix or ſeven canoes floating in the ſurf; they ſtood in ſhore, and the ſavages retreated to a riſing hill, cloſe to the water-ſide. The lieutenant, dubious whether their retreat proceeded from fear, or a deſign to ambuſcade them, reſolved not to be ſurprized, and running cloſe in ſhore, ordered the grappling to be dropt near enough to reach them with the guns, but too far off to be in danger from their treachery. Thus they began to engage, aiming at, and determining to kill as many of them as their guns could reach. After ſome time they diſlodged them; but many of them being wounded, and ſome killed, they began to

Digitized by Google

to diſperſe. The lieutenant obſerved their panic, and ſupported by the officers and marines, leapt on ſhore, and purſued the fugitives. They had not advanced far from the water ſide, before they beheld a moſt horrible ſight; the heads, hearts, livers and lights of three or four of their people broiling on the fire, and their bowels lying at the diſtance of about ſix yards from the fire, with ſeveral of their hands and limbs, mangled, ſome broiled, and ſome raw; but no other parts of their bodies, which gave cauſe to ſuſpect that the cannibals had devoured all the reſt. A large body of them appeared on a hill about two miles off; but night coming on, they durſt not proceed to attack them; nor was it ſafe to leave the ſhore, to take account of the killed, their body being but ſmall, and the ſavages many and fierce. They were armed with long lances, and weapons like a ſerjeant's halbert, of hard wood, and mounted with bone inſtead of iron. Nothing belonging to the cutter could be ſeen, but one of the oars, which was broken and ſtuck in the ſand, and the faſtenings of the Indian's canoes tied to it. It was ſuſpected that the dead bodies of their people had been divided among the different parties of ſavages that had been concerned in the maſſacre; and it was not improbable but that the party that was ſeen at a diſtance, were feaſting upon ſome of the others, as thoſe on the ſhore had been upon what were found, before they were diſturbed by the crew of the long-boat. Be that as it may, they could diſcover no traces of more than four of

Digitized by Google

their bodies, nor could they tell where the ſavages had concealed the cutter. Night coming on, and the lieutenant not willing to truſt the crew in an open boat, ſo near ſuch barbarians, ordered the canoes to be deſtroyed, and carefully collecting the remains of their mangled companions, they haſtened from this horrid ſcene, and got on board the ſhip before midnight. The remains of the bodies brought on board were examined by the ſurgeon, but he could not make out to whom they belonged; ſo they were decently laid together, and with the uſual ſolemnity obſerved on board ſhips, committed to the ſea.

From the cannibals own relation of this maſſacre to captain Cook afterwards, it was believed that beſides murdering the crew, they had ſeized the ſhip; becauſe the ſtrangers, they alledged, had firſt put to death ſome of their countrymen, without provocation.

The 19th of December the Adventure was ready to follow the Reſolution, who, on the 25th of November ſet ſail from Charlotte Sound; and after ſome fruitleſs time ſpent in ſearch of the Adventure, took her departure from New-Zealand on the 26th, and purſued her voyage.

However, it was the 22d before the Adventure got clear of land; and then the clothes and effects of the ten men who were murdered and

and eaten, were ſold before the maſt, according to the old ſea cuſtom.

Nothing material occured till Jan. 1, 1774, when ſtrong gales and rainy weather came on, and when, by reaſon of the lofty ſeas, they were obliged to lye to. The violence of the gale abating towards night, and the wind being at weſt, and their courſe S. S. E. they proceeded on their voyage at a great rate.

On the 11th of January, being in latitude 58 deg. 17 min. S. and in long. 212 deg. E they came in ſight of ſeveral iſlands of ice.

On the 1ſt of February they found themſelves in 61 deg. 20 min. S. and to the eaſtward of Cape Horn, to the great pleaſure of the common ſeamen, who rejoiced at the thoughts of ſoon beholding their native country, the dangers of diſcovery being now paſt. They were the more elated as thinking themſelves the firſt who had ever paſſed Cape Horn in an eaſterly courſe; but in this they were miſtaken.

On the 26th of February they paſſed the meridian of London, in lat. 54 deg. 24 min. S. and in ſurrounding the globe to the eaſtward, having gained a day, they altered their ſtyle, calling this the 27th: and the wind favouring, they continued their courſe to the

Digitized by Google

Cape of Good Hope, and on the 17th came in ſight of Table Bay.

On the 19th of March they caſt anchor at the Cape; and on the 13th of July about ſeven in the morning they came in ſight of Plymouth, from whence they had taken their departure juſt two years before; and on the 15th anchored ſafe at Spithead.

Having thus followed the track of the Adventure, from her firſt ſetting out till her return, we ſhall reſume the thread of our narrative with reſpect to the Reſolution, which we left ſafely moored in Charlotte Sound.

On Wedneſday the 3d of November the Reſolution anchored in her former birth, as convenient for both wood and water. Here they were informed that ſome ſtrange Indians had been there, and had eaten all the goats, hogs, and poultry, that the Captain had put on ſhore alive at his laſt viſit to breed.

The 5th the copper oven was landed to bake bread for the ſhip; the brewers were alſo as fully employed, but the Indians found means to carry away ſeveral of the brewing utenſils, which however were again recovered.

The 6th many of them came along ſide the ſhip, and brought weapons and curioſities to ſell; but were unwilling to diſpoſe of their battle-

Digitized by Google

battle-axes, which they set the greateſt value upon. Fiſh they brought in abundance.

During about three weeks ſtay here, no tidings came of the Adventure, and every thing being ready for ſailing, the men had leave by turns to divert themſelves on ſhore; but here ſome inducements were wanting, for the women, though not ugly, are chaſte; and it was dangerous to attempt liberties with them, without permiſſion. Few of the men therefore choſe to ſtray in the woods where ſo much was to be apprehended from the natives, who, friendly as they may appear, are not to be truſted.

A party of officers one day made an excurſion to view the country, and obſerve the manners and way of living of the natives, when calling at a little cove, a few miles from the ſhore, they found them feaſting on a man they had lately killed. They ſeemed not to be diſcompoſed at their approach, but civilly invited them by ſigns to partake; and as a dainty, they brought them the man's head from the lower jaw upwards ready dreſſed; then preſenting the hafelet of the man juſt warmed, expreſſed by ſigns the ſavourineſs of the meat, preſſed them to eat, and ſeemingly with ſome reſentment at their refuſal. The gentlemen, however, made ſigns that they were not unwilling to buy the head, provided it would be no affront to them to carry it away; they rea-

Digitized by Google

dily agreed, and it was brought on board, with which they afterwards treated an Indian chief, who eat it voraciouſly before the whole ſhip's crew.

It may be noticed, that all the teeth were miſſing in this head, and that they ſet a value upon the teeth, by wearing them either as trophies or ornaments in their ears.

As a reaſon for putting the man to death, on whom they laſt feaſted, they let the gentlemen underſtand, that they had been lately at war with the North-Iſland Indians; and made twenty of their enemies priſoners, whom they kept alive in ſecure places; and that they put them to death as they had occaſion for a feaſt.

Their weapons of war are the ſame as thoſe already deſcribed in the voyages to the Southern hemiſphere, by Engliſh navigators; however, ſome of their pikes or javelins are 36 feet long: they throw theſe to a great diſtance with prodigious force; the weapon they uſe for cloſe fight being about three feet long, ſhaped not unlike our bats, but having a broad back and ſharp edge, is heavy enough to cleave a man's ſkull at one blow.

In the evening of the day the officers made this viſit, they heard from ſhore a grievous yelling, which ended with the moſt terrifying ſhrieks,

Digitized by Google

ſhrieks. Something of the ſame kind had been heard by former navigators; as theſe noiſes came at the cloſe of the day from the receſſes of the woods, it is ſuppoſed, that the victims of their revenge, and their depraved appetite, are then ſacrificed.

November the 24th the ſeamen deplored the fate of the Adventure, being of opinion that ſhe muſt either have been wrecked or damaged ſo much as to be unable to proceed on her courſe; but the captain cauſed a letter to be written, and incloſed in a bottle, directing his aſſociate what courſe to ſteer, and to depart as ſoon as his ſhip ſhould be in a proper condition; he ordered the place where the bottle was concealed to be engraven upon a tree, as not likely to be obſerved by the natives, but which could not eſcape the notice of the ſhip's company, when they came to examine the adjacent coaſt.

On this day, the Captain having previouſly landed ſome live animals on an uninhabited part of the country, leſs diſcoverable by the Indians, with a view to their multiplying for a ſupply to future navigators, gave orders for all his people to come on board, and to prepare for ſailing; during which a complaint having been made by an Indian againſt a ſailor, and that being found juſt, he cauſed the man to receive twelve ſevere laſhes in ſight of the Indian.

Digitized by Google

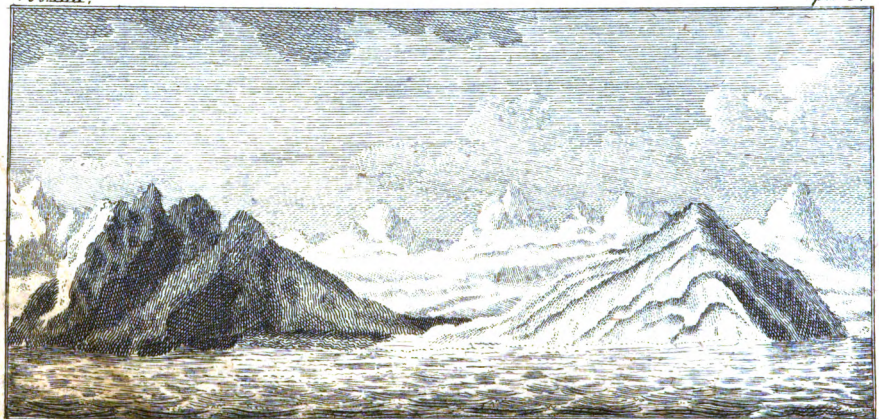
On the 25th they weighed and came to ſail, but the wind ſetting full into the ſtrait, it was night before they cleared the channel.

Next day was ſpent in looking for the Adventure, firing guns every half hour as they ſailed along ſhore, and narrowly viewing every inlet, but the guns not being anſwered, nor any ſign of a wreck to be ſeen, and only a ſmoke to be obſerved, which was found to proceed from a fire kindled by the natives; the wind proving fair, the weather fine, and a briſk breeze ſpringing up in the evening, they took leave of the iſland, and proceeded on their voyage with a full ſail.

Dec. 14, a freſh gale at N. W. courſe E. S. E. they ſaw a monſtrous large iſland of ice a-head of them. Lat. at noon 65 deg. 6½ min. eight or ten of them being in ſight.

On the 15th about two in the morning they paſſed the large iſland, computed to be three miles in circumference, and 60 feet above the level of the ſea. At five the ice came ſo thick about the ſhip, that ſhe was unable to proceed either to the ſouthward or eaſtward; they were therefore obliged to tack ſhip, in order to get clear. The ice iſlands preſented a very romantic ſcene of ruined caſtles, churches, arches, ſteeples, wrecks of ſhips, and a thouſand wild and groteſque forms of monſters, dragons,

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

dragons, and the like. Penguins alſo perpetually ſcreaming, added to the horror of the ſcene.

On the 16th the weather having cleared up, the boats were ſent out to bring in ice, as had been practiſed before in the ſame latitude, to ſave their ſtock of water; for though they often uſed Dr. Irvin's apparatus for making ſalt water freſh, diſtilling ſometimes forty gallons a day, yet the former was ſo much ſuperior, that the latter was only uſed to ſupply the animals on board, while the other was preferred by the chiefeſt officers. While this was doing, the ſhip lay to; but a ſudden ſwell coming on before the boats were half loaded, they were glad to get a-board with their lives; but not without conſiderable damage to the boats. This day they ſaw a large whale at a diſtance; but the breeze freſhening, they ſoon loſt ſight of her.

The 17th the ſea appearing calm, they renewed the buſineſs of watering the ſhip with ice with freſh ardour. It being found a grievous taſk to thoſe who had been obliged to plunge their hands in the ſea for the looſe ice, the Captain furniſhed the people who manned the boats with pick axes, ſledge hammers, and double-headed hatchets, to break the ſolid maſſes that floated. This, though laborious, was much eaſier than lifting the pieces out of the water; eſpecially as every man was encouraged

Digitized by Google

couraged with a dram when he went out, and another upon his return.

But in the afternoon a fall of ſnow came on, the like of which is unknown in this part of the world, the flakes being larger than gooſe feathers, and falling ſo thick that from the quarter-deck they could not ſee the boltſprit.

The 18th the longitude was 207 degrees E.——In theſe high latitudes nothing is to be ſeen but ſea and ice, where icicles frequently hang to the noſes of the men more than an inch long; where the froſt is ſometimes ſo intenſe as to freeze the very breath upon their clothes; where the men are caſed in frozen ſnow as if in armour; where the running rigging has been ſo enlarged by frozen ſleet as hardly to be graſped by the largeſt hand; and where the windward ſide of the ſhip has been ſo glazed with ice as hardly to be diſtinguiſhed from the little iſlets that ſurrounded her; yet under all theſe hardſhips, the men were in high ſpirits over their grog, and not a man ſick.—This day the fog being impenetrable by the eye, they were alarmed by a craſh as if a thouſand houſes had been tumbling about their ears at once, and preſently they diſcovered a ſmall iſland of ice juſt under their leeward bow. Inſtantly all hands were called aloft, and by good providence they weathered the ice, but the danger was ſo imminent, that in

leſs

Digitized by Google

leſs than a quarter of an hour the ſhip muſt have been overwhelmed and loſt.

The pieces that fell upon deck, ſome of them larger than brickbats, were carefully collected and converted into water, having got upwards of 30 tons of ice on board.

The 27th, ſteering northweſterly, the iſlands of ice increaſed in number, and the looſe ice beginning to be troubleſome, they could make little or no way to the ſouthward, which determined the Captain to change his courſe.

The 28th in latitude 64 deg. 22 min. the people began to feel the effects of the cold; for now they firſt complained of cramp pains, cold, rheumatiſm, and other grievous diſorders.

From this time nothing occurred to them but a continuation of the ſame hardſhips from the climate and weather with little intermiſſion, likewiſe ſome rude ſtorms and contrary winds, which drove them out of their intended courſe, and thereby ſometimes deceived them with the falſe appearances of diſtant lands, which proved to be no more than vaſt iſlands of ſolid ice, till happily gaining milder latitudes, they found themſelves on the 9th of March, 1774, in that of 27° 7′ S. and lon. 105½′ W. or according to our common way of reckoning 254° 10′ E.

Digitized by Google

March 10, a fresh breeze being at E. half N. course W. half S. all hands were employed in preparing to land, being positive that land could not be far off; many signs concurring to confirm their opinion, besides being near the place where the geographers have placed Easter Island. Latitude at noon 27° 11′.

On the 11th they bore away, all sails spread, and at six in the morning they descried land, bearing W. ½ S. at the distance of seven or eight leagues.

The 12th a dead calm. At six they were about eleven or twelve miles from shore, the land bearing N. N. W. The calm continuing they lay off and on all night.

The 13th they sounded, and found ground at 91 fathom red and white firm corally sand in latitude 27° 6′. At four the cutter was hoisted out, and sent on shore to look for good anchorage. At five she returned with news, that at the distance of five miles from the island there was safe anchoring. One of the natives came on board the boat, a man of a middling stature, curiously tattowed from head to foot. His language was different from that of any of the islanders they had yet seen, so that he was understood only by signs. The island promised little in appearance on their approaching it; they could see indeed at about six or seven miles up the country several houses, but no co-

coa-

Digitized by Google

coa-nut or other large trees, no beautiful plantations, as on the iſlands of Middleburg, and Amſterdam, but a low level green within land, defended from the ſea by craggs and rocks near the ſhore. The wind ſtill proving contrary, they caſt anchor where directed.

The 14th the captain ordered the pinnace to be hoiſted out, and the great and ſmall cutters to be manned; and he, attended by his chief officers, and in company with Mr. Foſter, went on ſhore about ſix in the morning, and returned on board again about nine. The wind coming fair they weighed, and ſtood in cloſe to land, and again came to an anchor about two miles from land in 40 fathom water. Several of the natives came on board, the greateſt part ſwimming from the ſhore, and ſome in wretched canoes, and ſo ſmall that three people could barely ſit in them: they were indeed prettily conſtructed, but of the very worſt materials; nor was it eaſy to conceive how they were procured, as no trees could be ſeen on the iſland even by thoſe who were ſent to ſurvey it. Canoes, indeed, ſeemed unneceſſary here, as hardly any fiſh was to be ſeen upon the coaſt.

The people on board told them by ſigns that they wanted proviſions, and ſhewed them ſeveral articles they would willingly exchange with them; ſuch as nails, beads, looking-glaſſes, knives, ſciſſars, and the like, with ſome linen

Digitized by Google

and Otaheite-cloth. The linen they preferred for its whiteneſs, that being a colour they are moſt pleaſed with. The chief articles they brought to ſell were fowls, ſweet potatoes, a few plantains, and ſome bananas. The chiefs came on board with five or ſix fowls ready barbicued as preſents for the captain, who in return loaded them with trifles which pleaſed them exceedingly. The men were of the middle ſtature, ſtrong, and healthy: they were naked, having only a broad net-work girdle round the waiſt. The women wore a garment from head to foot, and were beſides painted with orange colour, red, yellow, and white. They reſemble the New Zealanders very nearly in habit and appearance. They came on board without weapons; but in their country, arms were found, though very different from thoſe of the iſlanders under the tropics. It was very ſingular that under their hair, which was in general ſhort and buſhy, their ears appeared, upon examination, of an aſtoniſhing length, but ſo nicely wrapt up, by means of the griſtles being taken out, that they ſeemed rather like ſmall flatted chitterlings than ears. One of them meaſured full five inches and a half long. Their huts were very mean, covered all over, except a ſmall hole to creep in at, which ſerved them for door, window, and chimney. They were the greateſt thieves they had ever met with; and it was found neceſſary to ſhoot one thief to preſerve the lives of many others. When the Reſolution arrived here

Digitized by Google

here ſhe was principally in want of water; and the iſland afforded none good. They dug a well, but that yielded only a brackiſh bad-taſted ſort, ſuch as they met with at the iſlands of Middleburgh and Amſterdam; yet the natives ſeemed contented with it, though they had no cocoa-nuts, the milk of which is the common beverage of the tropical iſlanders.

The arms which the waterers ſaw in their rout were ſpears of a ſubſtance and ſhape unknown elſewhere, and other curious weapons they had in the forms of fiſhes, birds, and men. They had alſo engines for throwing ſtones, ſome of which they made uſe of in a ſkirmiſh with a party of marines.

The ſhort time that our voyagers continued upon the iſland, neceſſarily obliged them to leave many things unobſerved, which deſerved notice among a people, who by their ſituation on a ſpeck of land not more than 12 or 15 leagues in circumference, and at leaſt 1000 miles from any known land, may well be ſuppoſed to be original.

On the 16th of March our voyagers weighed anchor, and ſet ſail.

April the 7th, they ſaw land bearing W. S. W. At five bore away W. At ſix ſteered W. S. W. Perceived ſeveral iſlands, known by the name of Marqueſas, diſcovered by Mendana in 1595.

Digitized by Google

They are of a great height, and in general their extent may be from five to twelve leagues, between the 9th and 10th deg. of South lat. but the long. uncertain.

At half paſt four in the morning the ſhip brought to, and caſt anchor in thirty fathom water; fine white ſand. Several canoes came from the ſhore alongſide the ſhip; but none of the natives would venture on board. They brought ſome bread-fruit, and a hog, as a preſent to the captain; and were willing to exchange whatever they had for any trifles. The gentlemen knew of no voyagers that have viſited theſe iſlands before ſince the firſt diſcovery: they were greatly ſurprized, as hardly any tradition could remain of the former European viſitors, after ſo many years had elapſed ſince the Spaniards had arrived there. Whether they were pleaſed or terrified at the approach of the ſhip, or whether they intended to receive their viſitors hoſpitably, cannot be determined. Thoſe Indians who came alongſide made a ſtrange noiſe as they rowed aſhore, and which continued the whole ſucceeding night, during which they kept fires burning on the tops of the hills, probably by way of beacons to alarm the country.

The 8th, the Indians carried a fair appearance; and in the morning they brought bread fruit, which they exchanged for nails, bits of broken

Digitized by Google

broken china-ware, white paper, or whatever was ſhewn them. About ſix, great numbers of them preſented themſelves on the ſhore, ſhouting, dancing, leaping, and running; ſhortly after, five or ſix of them came cloſe to the ſhip's ſide, and ſigns were made to them to come on board, which they either did not, or would not underſtand; but one of them preſently unſhipped the ſide iron ſtantion, and dived with it into the ſea, nor could he be perſuaded to return it, but he roſe at ſome diſtance and got into a canoe. Leſt by ſuffering him to eſcape, others might be encouraged to attempt the like thefts, orders were given to fire while he was yet within reach, which fortunately ſhot him dead, without hurting any of his companions, two men being in the canoe; one of them threw the ſtauntion overboard, and himſelf after it: the other kept baling the blood and water out of the canoe, while the captain in the pinnace came alongſide, to take a view of the man that was killed. His death ſtruck all the Indians with fear and conſternation. Thoſe who were at ſea made haſtily to land; and thoſe who were dancing on the ſhore fled precipitately to the hills, where they howled, and made many frantic motions for more than an hour: in the mean time ſome of the moſt daring among them tried to cut the ropes, and carry off the ſhip's buoy; upon which one of the great guns loaded with grape-ſhot was fired amongſt them, which put an end to their attempt. Being now convinced of their own in-

Digitized by Google

ſignificance, they acquieſced in furniſhing whatever was demanded of them. They brought a few hogs, as perhaps not having many upon the iſland; but of ſuch fruits as the iſland produced, they brought abundance. The captain and the other gentlemen went aſhore in the pinnace, and landed without oppoſition. But, previouſly to this a meſſenger came in a canoe to the ſhip, holding a green bough with a white flag faſtened to it, which he preſented to the captain, with ſix ſmall hogs. Theſe the Capt. received, placing the bough with the flag at the gang-way of the ſhip, at the ſame time diſplaying another white flag in ſuch a manner at the maſt-head, that the inhabitants might ſee it at a great diſtance. Thus hoſtilities ceaſed on both ſides. The gentlemen ranged the iſland without interruption. The waterers found water in great plenty, and ſo good, that what remained of the water taken in at Eaſter Iſland was all bilged, and thrown into the ſea. The iſland which the captain made choice of to caſt anchor, appears to be the ſame to which the Spaniards gave the name of Dominica, lying E. by N. and W. by S.

The male inhabitants, for the women ſcarce made their appearance, were of the largeſt ſize; ſtrong, active, and well ſhaped; and were in general more elegantly painted than any they had yet ſeen, having their very lips tattowed: and the figures on their faces and breaſts ſo curiouſly delineated, that no painter in Europe could

Digitized by Google

could have ſketched the outline of a bird, fiſh, or animal, with greater exactneſs. It was remarkable, that among them there were many without their left eye.

When the pinnace returned the captain brought with him ſix hogs, a conſiderable quantity of bread-fruit, and ſome plantains: and the inhabitants brought ſome cocoa-nuts to ſell as ſoon as the courſe of trade was ſettled. The men were in general naked, except a thin covering round the waiſt. The women were covered from head to foot with a white cloth, not unlike that of Otaheite, but not ſo fine. Few of them appeared; and thoſe not handſome. The only arms ſeen among them, were javelins, which they threw with great dexterity and force, and ſlings, with which they fling ſtones to an incredible diſtance; their muſical inſtruments are drums and conchs.

The 9th, an affront being offered by the ſailors to their women, the natives all retired to the mountains. As all trade was now at an end, and nothing to be procured but water, ſome perſons were deputed to conciliate matters, who carried preſents with them of ſuch things as were thought would be moſt acceptable. A reconciliation was effected, and they returned loaded with fruit. However, a party of marines was placed to protect the waterers from inſult.

The

The captain and gentlemen having reconnoitered the country adjoining to the bay where the ſhip anchored, next viſited a bay at ſome diſtance to the ſouthward, in order to learn its produce, and to extend the trade for hogs, cocoa-nuts and bread fruit. They found the natives very friendly diſpoſed, and ready to bring to market whatever the country produced. Here the captain purchaſed eighteen hogs, a large quantity of bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, and plantains, and returned again about ſeven in the evening. In this bay, the women were not afraid to be ſeen; nor was the leaſt diſtruſt perceivable on either ſide. The natives brought their articles to the ſhore, and the purveyor ſhewed thoſe he had to exchange, and the natives being to chuſe, each what he liked beſt, the purveyor fixed the value. The articles they fancied moſt were picture cards, pieces of Chineſe paper, China ware, glaſs, nails, and bits of red cloth. For trifles of this kind they readily exchanged their hogs and fruit. The news of this honeſt dealing having ſpread over the iſland, and reached the adjoining iſles, the ſhip was next day ſurrounded with more than fifty canoes, full of proviſions of various kinds, among which was a fruit peculiar to theſe iſlands: It is thus deſcribed by Thevenot: it is about the ſize of an ordinary melon, and is not unlike ſome genera of that fruit in ſhape; it grows upon trees, and when growing is of a deep green, but when ripe is of a fine delicate poliſhed green, though the outſide

Digitized by Google

outside appears rough and jagged, with crofs rays not unlike the pine apple. The figure is not quite round, but fomewhat narrower at the point than at the ftalk, from whence grows a core that reaches to the middle, and within this core is a web; it has no ftone or kernel, nor any thing ufelefs except the outfide, and that is very thin; the reft is all eatable, and makes but one mafs, which is very delicious. Some of thefe traders were very civil and courteous; they had their hair dreffed in a fingular manner, being parted and tied up in two knots behind, fomething like the wigs worn by counfellors at the bar. Their beards alfo were fhorn in a peculiar manner, and tied underneath their chins. This fafhion of tying the hair however appeared to be no mark of diftinction, but was only a variety of fancy which every one might follow or neglect as he pleafed. But there was one thing particular, and perhaps univerfal among the males; and that was to tie back the prepuce in fuch a manner as to anfwer all the purpofes of circumcifion, without being circumcifed. Among the tropical iflanders, with whofe manners and cuftoms our late difcoverers have made us acquainted, the free indulgence of the women is a leading character; but in thefe iflands the reverfe of that character feems to be the fact, the women holding indelicacy in the utmoft abhorrence.

Such of their houfes as were feen from the fhip, appeared to be fmall and contemptible little

little huts, covered with platted leaves, and ſupported by the trunks of trees. Indeed, ſo near the line the inhabitants require no large or pompous buildings to defend them from the weather. Shade and coolneſs, and a ſlender covering from the dews and rain that fall in that delightful climate, are all that nature requires. The only pride viſible in theſe people was in dreſſing their hair and adorning their heads; ſeveral of them had caps curiouſly worked, and in elegant forms compoſed of feathers of various colours handſomely interſperſed with ſpangles of mother of pearl. The moſt conſpicuous mark of diſtinction appeared to be tattowing. The chiefs were tattowed from their faces to their fingers ends, not in volutes or ſpiral lines, but in figures of various kinds, ſuited to the different parts of the body, according to the artiſt's fancy.

The 11th, Capt. Cook having ſupplied the ſhip with what neceſſaries the iſland produced, and having ſurveyed the bays, while Mr. Foſter and his aſſociates were taking a view of the land, he gave orders for getting all things in readineſs to ſail; and about four the ſame afternoon they weighed anchor and came to ſea, tacking every hour to clear the ſtraits between the iſlands, they being ſituated in reſpect to each other nearly in a ſquare, which made the navigation both difficult and dangerous.

The

Digitized by Google

The 12th, about ten in the morning, the ſhip ſpread all her canvas, and proceeded at a moderate rate, directing her courſe to the S. S. W. with the wind at E. S. E.

The 17th at ten the man at the maſt-head called out land, bearing about W. This land had been ſeen by commodore Byron, in the Dolphin's firſt voyage round the world; it is very extenſive, and appears, at a great diſtance, like an aſſemblage of many ſmall iſles, full of trees. Mr. Byron called it George's-Iſland, Lon. at noon 214° 26½′. At noon they were at the N. W. ſide of it, and about one in the afternoon, hoiſted the large cutter out, and ſent her on ſhore to ſound. The pinnace and cutter went on ſhore, well armed, with the firſt and third lieutenants, and other gentlemen, to reconnoitre the coaſt; the natives came from the other ſide of a lagoon that ſeemed to part the iſland, armed in large canoes; ſome of them brought one cocoa-nut in their hands, but would ſcarce trade at all; they wanted every thing they ſaw for nothing. They were armed with long ſpears and lances, pointed with ſting-ray tail-bones. They made a hideous noiſe, and ſome were for ſeizing the people's muſquets, while others with ſpears advanced towards the boats. The gentlemen put off, and gave the captain an account of their inhoſpitable behaviour, who ordered the guns to be loaded with round ſhot, and fired over the point where they were aſſembled; two

Digitized by Google

two of the ſhot went through the trees, and they perceived from the ſhip one large cocoa-nut-tree fall; two others went right through the place where the natives were poſted; at which they ſcreamed and made a fearful noiſe. After being thus intimidated, they brought in their boats 27 cocoa-nuts, and 6 dogs; the dogs were in general ſmall and thick, with a large head, not unlike that of our bull-dogs. Theſe Indians were in general ſtout made men, tall, and well proportioned; and the women altogether as ordinary. They had no cloaths except a piece of white netting about their waiſts, but they were plentifully marked about the breaſts and arms with fiſhes and other ſea animals. They had a moſt ſavage look, and were of a colour near to black; they had black hair, tied on the back part, or on the top of their heads; none of them were painted. Their houſes were like dog-kennels, about the length and breadth of a man, and not two feet high, thatched with cocoa-nut leaves; they ſpoke quick, and eat their words, as the ſea phraſe is, like the New Guinea negroes.

Dogs make a part of their luxuries; for our voyagers took notice, after a number of them had been ſlain, that dogs were brought as peace-offerings, to appeaſe the wrath of their murderers, which they would not have done, had they not thought them delicacies; he further obſerves, that every native had his dog; and when the houſes were deſerted, the dogs remained

Digitized by Google

remained and made a moſt terrific noiſe in the night by their howling. Good water, ſcurvy-graſs, and cocoa-nuts were found here in plenty, with which they loaded their boats.

The people of George's Iſland are not deſtitute of invention. Their canoes are of a very curious conſtruction, and muſt coſt them much pains. They conſiſt of planks exceedingly well wrought, and here and there adorned with carving; theſe planks are ſewed together, and over every ſeam there is a ſtrip of tortoiſeſhell, ingeniouſly inlaid to keep out the water. Their bottoms are ſharp as a wedge, and the whole body is very narrow; ſo that two of them are generally joined together by a couple of croſs ſpars, a ſpace from 6 to 8 feet being left open between them. A maſt is hoiſted in each of them, and a ſail ſpread between the maſts, made of matting moſt curiouſly woven, and their cordage, though made of the outer bark of the cocoa nut, is excellent. Such is the nature and ſuch the art of the people of this remote iſland.

The voyagers, having availed themſelves all they could of the produce of the iſland, and gratified their curioſity in viſiting their places of worſhip, and the repoſitories of their dead, about ſix in the evening the pinnace and large cutter were hoiſted in, and there being no anchorage, the ſhip lay off and on all night.

Digitized by Google

The 18th, a freſh breeze from the eaſtward ſpringing up, at 5 in the morning they bore away, and made ſail to the S. S. W. and came in ſight of another fine pleaſant iſland, and ſteered S. S. W. along ſhore without landing, though here the Dolphin and Tamar found the inhabitants much more hoſpitable than in the great iſland. Lat. at noon by obſervation 14° 33′.

The 19th, at three they ſtood to the S. S E. At five bore away S. W. by S. At half paſt ſeven ſaw land, bearing Weſt, a low iſland, extending to a conſiderable diſtance. At ten came in ſight of another iſland, bearing S. S. E. ſhip's courſe S. W. At eleven bore away W. S. W. At one they perceived a reef of long extent, being a chain of ſmall iſlands, from a quarter of a mile to one mile and a half from each other: they abounded with cocoa-nut-trees, and the reefs of rocks which divided them were at times dry. It was imagined there were turtle about them, as the natives were ſeen buſy on many of thoſe reefs.—About three leagues to the ſouthward, or S. S. W. of this range of iſles, they perceived ſeveral other iſlands ſeemingly larger than theſe, and ſo chained together. Iſlands, and chains of iſlands, preſented themſelves almoſt hourly, till the 21ſt, when they made George's Iſland, bearing S. S. W. (the ſouth part.) At half paſt eleven ſteered W. Lat. noon 16° 50′. At one ſteered W. ½ S.— At ſix ſhortened ſail, being about three

three leagues from the land, hauled up to the northward, and lay off and on all night.

The 22d, at nine they brought to in Mattavey-bay, and the reſt of the day was ſpent in preparing to land. All this day the natives thronged about the ſhip, to expreſs their joy on the arrival of their old friends; among whom the girls were no ſmall part of the company. Each was anxious to know what preſents their lovers had brought them, where they had been, what curioſities they had met with, and no favours were to be expected till the cheſt was opened, and they complimented with what they liked beſt. Some among them expreſſed a real affection for the men they loved, but moſt of them choſe to attach themſelves to new admirers, by whom they expected to be better rewarded than by their old. They were not now as formerly to be gratified with a nail; and ſome of the ſailors ſquandered all they had, and all they could get credit for, upon them.

The 23d, all hands were employed in preparations for refitting the ſhip; and the armourer's forge being put up, ſome of the men were eager to make uſe of it for their own private advantage before it was ſet to work for the repairs of the ſhip; but being diſcovered, were ſeverely puniſhed; and not only he who uſed it, but he who ſuffered it to be uſed, was equally ſentenced to receive twelve laſhes.

Digitized by Google

The 24th, the buſineſs to be done being ſettled, ſuch of the crew as could be ſpared, had leave to go on ſhore; and ſo alternately. This day king Portotow with ſeveral of his courtiers and officers came to pay their compliments to the captain, and made the uſual preſents. Theſe preſents they look upon as a free gift; but if a return is not made in the ſame way of greater value, the giver is diſobliged, and generally ſome inconvenience attends. The king with his retinue came in double canoes, like thoſe of King George's Iſland, but different from thoſe of Otaheite; ſuch as it is probable came from ſome neighbouring iſle, and only are ſeen when theſe chiefs viſit each other, or pay a more than ordinary compliment to ſtrangers. King Portotow brought with him three large hogs, and a quantity of the fineſt cloth the country afforded, which he preſented to the captain, who entertained his followers, according to their ranks; being ſhewn the curioſities brought from Middleburgh and Amſterdam, ſome beautiful ſcarlet feathers ſtruck them, and for a plume theſe chiefs would give a hog. And now Amſterdam feathers took the lead; and happy the ſailor who had laid in a ſtock of them.

The 25th it thundered, lightned, and rained to an inconceivable degree. The claps were ſo loud and terrifying, that the report of 10,000 cannon fired off at once could not be more tremendous.

Digitized by Google

mendous. The lightning appeared about the masts and rigging like vortices of blue flame, the torrents of rain that fell with it in all probability saved the ship from being set on fire. This lasted for three hours. The afternoon was fair, and the natives came in from all quarters to welcome their friends; bringing hogs and fruit to sell for implements of iron, which still bore a value among the multitude. The women now had made their choice, and when the men were prevented from sleeping on shore, the ladies were kind enough to come on board to sleep with them.

The 26th, the whole island seemed to be in agitation, as if a general muster of their whole strength had taken place, preparatory to a war. Above 600 canoes were ranged in order of battle. In each of these canoes were placed upright in sockets, a certain number of lances of various lengths, most of them headed with the tail bones of the sting ray, whose wounds prove commonly mortal; they had besides stones piled up on stages, as cannon-balls are piled up in European arsenals. At this warlike appearance, captain Cook ordered the pinnace to be instantly got in readiness, and went himself to observe their motions; but upon his approach, they separated and retired. Whatever was the intent of this muster, whether it was only an occasional review, or whether it was preparatory to an attack upon any of the neighbouring islands, or with a view to

Digitized by Google

ſurprize the ſhip, no meaſure that followed gave ſufficient grounds to determine.

The 27th, all things appeared peaceable, the Indians came as uſual about the ſhip to trade, and the voyagers employed themſelves on ſhore without moleſtation; but a watchful eye was kept over the Indians.

From the 27th of April, till the 8th of May nothing worth relating happened, but on that day the coopers being at work in repairing the caſks by the river ſide, miſſed one of the number, and could not conceive by what inviſible hand it could have been conveyed away, as a watch was ſet in the night to prevent any ſuch accident, and a guard in the day kept conſtantly at the tents: thoſe of the ſhip's crew who happened to be on ſhore were all ſtrictly examined, as well as the watch and the guard; and one and all declared they knew nothing of the theft. Complaint was therefore made to the chiefs, who, in compliment to the gentlemen, reſided near the tents, that a theft had been committed, and that none but the ſubtileſt among their people could be the robber. It was therefore inſiſted, that ſtrict ſearch ſhould be made, and that as the thing loſt was of ſuch a bulk as not eaſily to be ſecreted, it was urged that it might be recovered, and the offender brought to juſtice. To this remonſtrance, menaces were added, and the whole iſland threatened if the thief was not delivered

delivered up. This cauſed great conſternation among the chiefs: they preſently aſſembled a large body of their people, and one of the chiefs made a long and peremptory ſpeech, which he delivered with a ſevere countenance; and as ſoon as he had ended, ſeveral perſons were obſerved to purſue different routes, in order as it proved to apprehend the felon: it was ſometime before he was found.

The next day the offender was brought in triumph by one party, and the caſk by another.

Upon his examination, it appeared, that the fellow had contrived a cavity in an over-grown buſhy part of a ſedgy ſwamp adjoining to the river, big enough to contain the caſk; then he went at midnight to a winding nook at ſome diſtance from the watch and ſentinel, but within hearing of both. Here he plunged himſelf into the water, and kept floundering about till he had attracted the notice of the guard, and when by peeping over the bank, he perceived they were making towards the place where the noiſe was, he ſwam ſilently under water, till he came near the ſpot where the caſk he had in view was ſtanding on the edge of the bank. This he ſoftly pulled into the water, and made off with it, placing it between his neck and his ſhoulders, that he might not alarm the guard upon their return by the noiſe of puſhing it before him in the water: they were ſome time in ſearching about to diſcover the cauſe of ſo

ſtrange

Digitized by Google

ſtrange a plunging, during which the fellow found means to ſecrete his prize, which he had ſo artfully covered, that it might have lain many years without being found, had not the hider confeſſed in what manner he had diſpoſed of it. To puniſh him as a terror to others, he was tied up and ſeverely whipt after the diſcipline of the navy for the like offences; this was done in preſence of the chiefs, and a great concourſe of the natives, who attended the execution, and who looked with an evil eye upon thoſe concerned in what they called a cruel puniſhment.

This, however, did not deter others from the like offences; for it was not long before another of them was detected on board the ſhip in ſtealing two jackets, who was tied to the geers, and received twelve laſhes.

Much about this time one of the ſentinels upon the watch falling aſleep, loſt his muſket. This was judged to be a theft of much greater conſequence than either of the former, not for the mere loſs of one muſket, and one charge of powder and ball, but as it had been the conſtant policy of thoſe who viſited the iſland before, to keep the natives as ignorant as poſſible of the uſe of fire-arms, the captain determined to furniſh them with no means of enlarging their knowledge from any neglect of his. He therefore began by puniſhing the ſentinel in a moſt exemplary manner for his breach of duty, that

Digitized by Google

that the natives might be eye-witneſſes of the ſeverity with which the people belonging to the ſhip were puniſhed when they committed any offence; and being informed that prince Ottoo was privy to the theft, and that he was removed from Eparre, the royal reſidence, to a diſtant part of the country, the captain diſpatched a meſſenger after him. At the ſame time ſeveral other great men, were making off in their canoes, with all poſſible ſecrecy and haſte; but being diſcovered from the ſhip, were inſtantly purſued. The captain, who himſelf commanded in the purſuit, made ſignals for them to bring to, but without effect: he then gave orders to fire; but as none of them were hurt, they rowed on. The fire was renewed, till at length they thought proper to yield. When they were taken on board, they were ſhewn the ſentinel in irons, and given to underſtand that he was again to be puniſhed if his muſket was not returned, and that he would in the end be killed for not killing the man in attempting to ſteal and to carry it away. This was ſaid to move their pity; for they are very compaſſionate, and will weep bitterly at the ſight of a perſon in the agony of pain; but their tears are like the tears of children eaſily excited, and as eaſily dried up. They were at the ſame time told, that, as by their flight it was manifeſt that they were not unacquainted with the robbery, and that there was reaſon to ſuſpect, that if prince Ottoo was not himſelf a robber, like them he had been inſtrumental

Digitized by Google

mental in promoting it. If they did not cauſe it to be returned, the captain declared with a ſevere tone of voice, that he would ſet fire to every boat about the iſland. This had a much more powerful effect than the method taken to excite their pity. They deſired to be releaſed, and promiſed to recover the muſket, and to ſend it on board, which they did.

The next morning a party of the natives brought it in a kind of rapture, as if by returning it they had delivered their country from impending ruin; aſſuring the captain, by meſſage from prince Ottoo, that he had left the thief dead in the woods, and deſired an interview with him to convince him of the fact. The captain replied, that he would wait upon the prince at the royal palace, to which he might return in ſafety, and that he wanted no other evidence of the truth of what they had reported than the prince's royal word. He diſmiſſed the meſſengers with preſents: and began to prepare himſelf for a viſit to Eparre, the place appointed; for, till the affair was reconciled, all trade was totally prohibited.

Next day ſome of Ottoo's chief officers came aboard, and acquainted the captain, that Ottoo rather wiſhed to receive him at the place of his preſent reſidence than at Eparre; but that if he would condeſcend to come without a guard, he would meet him at the palace. The captain having nothing more in view than

to

Digitized by Google

to re-eſtabliſh a good underſtanding with the natives, very readily gave his conſent to come unattended; and farther aſſured them, if his highneſs was ſtill under any dread, he would ſend one of his officers as a ſecurity that no indignity ſhould be offered to his perſon, nor any inſult to any of his retinue. This having diſſipated his fears, the manner of the viſit was ſettled, and the time fixed for the parties to meet, which was at nine the next morning.

As the diſtance from the ſhip was about four miles, and no carriage to be had, the captain ſet out pretty early with only Mr. Foſter, and one or two officers. When he arrived he found the prince ſitting very penſively; but when he was told that the gentlemen who were now before him were all the retinue the captain had brought with him, he appeared more chearful and lively, and expreſſed his deſire to renew the peace by every act of humiliation. The captain, on the other hand, received his ſubmiſſion with the greateſt alacrity, and entered familiarly into converſation with the women, who always on theſe occaſions make a part of the company, as did the other gentlemen with thoſe indifferently who compoſed the circle. Matters being thus cleared up and forgiven on both ſides, the captain took his leave, and in return invited the prince and his nobles to accompany him on board; but this they declined, as not being properly prepared. They, however, let him underſtand, that

Digitized by Google

that it ſhould not be long before they accepted of his invitation. Accordingly in a few days prince Ottoo with many of his chiefs and attendants in three canoes were obſerved making towards the ſhip. They had with them as preſents, hogs, fruit, and cloth; and inſiſted that no return ſhould be made for any thing; and, not to give offence, nothing was offered, but a variety of curioſities were laid in their way, which the captain knew it was almoſt impoſſible for them to refuſe. They looked wiſhfully at many things, but touched nothing. They were preſſed to dine, and they did not ſeem diſpleaſed with the attention paid them: they were variouſly entertained till dinner was ready, and particularly with muſic and dancing in a groteſque ſtile, which gave them great delight, as among other performances a hornpipe was introduced, at which they could ſcarce contain themſelves. When dinner was upon the table, and chairs were ſet, it was diverting to ſee the aukward figure they made, for they neither knew how to ſit upon a chair, nor how to feed themſelves with knife and fork. Their chiefs are fed like children by their ſervants; but ſpoons being put into their hands for the ſoups, they made ſhift to help themſelves with thoſe, and to eat heartily. They were offered wines of various ſorts unmixed, and ſome mixed with water, but they would drink nothing but water.

After

After dinner they were again diverted with muſic and dancing, to which they were very attentive; and in the evening, after tea, they departed, highly pleaſed with their day's entertainment.

While theſe things were tranſacting on board, the launch was employed on ſhore in getting in wood for the ſhip's uſe; but, as it is uſual, when the principal officers are engaged, the ſailors will take liberties, two of thoſe who were ordered to do duty on board, ſtrayed up the country in ſearch of new miſtreſſes; and before their return, the launch had left her ſtation, and was gone on board. This diſappointment, reduced the poor fellows to the diſagreeable alternative of either hiring a canoe to take them on board, or returning to the woods to the company they had juſt deſerted. In either caſe they expected puniſhment; but for lying out much more ſeverely than for immediately following the launch. The latter, therefore, they made their choice, in hope that the captain might not yet be made acquainted with their abſence, and that they might find favour with the officer to forbear complaint. They accordingly rowed aboard; but unluckily for them, the report of their crime had out-run their diligence; and the irons in which they were to be confined were in readineſs to be applied as ſoon as they had mounted the ſhip's ſide. They then repented when it was too late, the exchange they had made, and

Digitized by Google

wiſhed they had been captives to love, rather than priſoners in irons. Their puniſhment however was milder than they expected, having been ſentenced to receive only ſix laſhes each.

Peace being now reſtored, plenty ſucceeded: the chiefs came now more familiarly on board than at firſt; and the gentlemen, particularly Mr. Foſter, were more aſſiduouſly employed on ſhore than uſual: pains were taken too to keep the chiefs in good humour, by varying the diverſions, and fire-works were ſometimes played off from the maſt head, and ſometimes from the tents; the great guns ſhotted with round and grape, were fired off to ſhew their effects; and ſometimes the marines were drawn up in order of battle, to diſplay their evolutions.

In this manner mutual reſpect and mutual deſires to pleaſe were preſerved during the remainder of the ſhip's ſtay: the little interruptions that ſometimes happened between the common people and the ſailors, were here as in all other places, generally made up among themſelves; or, if complaint was made to the officer or principal chief, juſtice was impartially dealt to both parties.

On the 12th of May, preparations were made for leaving their ſtation; a few ſmall caſks of water were taken on board in the day, and at night fire works were renewed, which

Digitized by Google

which filled the ſpectators with wonder and aſtoniſhment; but juſt as the fire-works had ceaſed, it began to thunder and lighten, which now terrified the poor Indians more than the fire-works had pleaſed them before, imagining their deities were angry, becauſe the ſtrangers had uſurped their power.

On the 13th the Indians perceived that the ſtrangers were preparing to depart; they therefore flocked to the ſhip's ſide with every thing they thought of value, in order to purchaſe nails, knives, adzes, hatchets, ſciſſars, or iron of any ſort manufactured or not. Hogs were now in ſuch plenty, that they might be purchaſed as formerly, for an adze or an hatchet.

On the 14th the captain, with his officers and attendants, went on ſhore to take leave of the great men of the iſland, who had invited them to ſee a play at the palace; theſe plays reſemble thoſe already deſcribed, but are more ſimple, thoſe of Huaheiny being more artificial and complex. They ſeem to conſiſt, like the Venetian comedies, of nothing but geſtures and grimace, and have ſomething reſembling the tricks of harlequin.

About two in the afternoon the gentlemen returned, and with them Prince Otto, and his father, with many attendants, who brought their boats loaded with hogs, ſome turtle, and

Digitized by Google

a dolphin; delicacies which it was thought the iſland had not. About three the captain ſhewed a diſpoſition to depart, and then the girls came crouding about the ſhip, crying and lamenting as if parting from their neareſt and deareſt relations. It is not to be conceived what an exceſs of grief they expreſſed on this occaſion, and ſome of the common men appeared not to be wholly unaffected when they parted with their miſtreſſes. We have elſewhere obſerved that theſe people have tears at will, whenever they are diſpoſed to counterfeit ſorrow; but there is very little reaſon to imagine that thoſe tears flow from the heart; for the men cry here as frequently as the women.

The nobles appeared to be very much affected at parting with the captain, and as they then told him the reaſon of their muſtering in the manner already deſcribed, and that in five days they ſhould go to war with the people of Maurua, or York Iſland, he gave them an Engliſh pendant, which he taught them how to diſplay on the day of battle, and endeavoured to inſpire them with an enthuſiaſtic notion, that while they preſerved that ſtandard, they never would be overcome. And as theſe people look upon the Europeans to be poſſeſſed of gifts ſuperior to themſelves, it is not to be queſtioned that the ſight of the ſtandard will add to their courage, and that the perſuaſion of there being great virtue in it to enſure victory, will redouble their ardour to obtain it.

On

Digitized by Google

On the 14th of May, they left the ſhip under ſail, and that night ſhe cleared the reef.

The 15th they had an open ſea and a fine breeze in their favour; but juſt as the ſails were ſpreading, one of the officers from the gun-room ports, ſaw a perſon in the water, making from the ſhip towards the land; they immediately hove to, and hoiſted out the large cutter, and ſent her armed after the man, who proved to be the gunner's mate, endeavouring to eſcape with a view of being left behind; and pity it was that he happened to be diſcovered, as from him a more copious and accurate account of the religion and civil government of theſe people might have been expected after ſome years ſtay there, than could poſſibly be collected from a few ſhort viſits, by gentlemen who had the language to learn, but this attempt failing, the man was taken up, brought back, and laid in irons to bewail his ill-fortune, having flattered himſelf, as a man of enterprize and courage, with being made king of the country, or at leaſt prime miniſter.

After this the ſhip purſued her courſe to the N. W. and N. W. by W. having four of the natives of Otaheite on board as paſſengers to Huaheiney, to which ſhe was bound, and where ſhe anchored the ſame night. Here the captain was welcomed by king Oree, who came on board before the ſhip was well moored, bringing with him a hog as a preſent.

Digitized by Google

The 16th abundance of canoes came along ſide the ſhip, bringing hogs, fowls, and fruit of various ſorts, to barter, and each choſe what article he thought was moſt valuable. But while the greateſt part of the people were engaged in traffic, ſome were buſy in an attempt to carry off one of the ſhip's buoys; theſe however, being diſcovered before they had accompliſhed their deſign, they were fired upon, and obliged to jump into the ſea, leaving their canoe behind them, which was taken on board, and cut up for the uſe of the cooks. This day the captain and gentlemen went on ſhore to pay their compliments to the king and his nobles, and Mr. Foſter went up the country to examine its productions. This he continued daily during the ſhip's ſtay in this harbour. While he was thus employed, ſome of the other gentlemen and officers went up into the woods a-ſhooting, and the captain employed himſelf in laying in proviſions and ſtores.

On the 16th ſo great was the number of inhabitants that came about the ſhip, that centinels were placed in the gangways, to prevent the men from coming on board, but no oppoſition being made to the women, the ſhip was crouded with them.

The 17th king Oree came and dined on board, and the captain ordered the guns to be fired by way of ſalute at his entrance and departure; he had given the captain to underſtand

Digitized by Google

ſtand that he expected the ſame honours, as had been ſhewn to the chiefs of Otaheite.

It was reported the 18th, that the natives intended to attack the ſhip. The captain tho' he did not believe, yet was unwilling totally to diſregard the intimation; therefore he ordered 20 ſtands of arms to be in readineſs in caſe of need.

On the 20th, the firſt and ſecond lieutenants, and one of the mates being a duck ſhooting, were attacked by a party of more than fifty, who firſt deprived them of their arms, and then robbed them of what articles of trade they had with them; in the ſcuffle the firſt lieutenant loſt the ſkirt of his coat, and one of the other gentlemen received a ſevere blow. When the robbers had ſtripped them of their merchandize, they returned them their fowling pieces, and ſuffered them to proceed to the ſhip, where king Oree happened to be feaſting; they complained of the inſult, and demanded ſatisfaction; he told them that it was not in his power, the party being out of his juriſdiction; but he offered to head any number of the ſhip's company that ſhould be ſent to attack them, and would ſhew them the way to their reſidence, which offer was accepted; but at the ſame time informed them, that theſe men were not afraid of their guns, as they had frequently ſeen them miſs fire.

The

Digitized by Google

The 21ſt, the captain and officers ſet out on the expedition, and having ordered fifty marines with ſome ſailors to be well armed, they landed near the palace of the king, and requiring his promiſed conduct, he very readily conſented: having marched together for more than ten miles, they at length came to a high hill, which parted the dominions of Oree from thoſe of the king whoſe ſubjects they were in queſt of. Here they found the aſcent very ſteep, and fatiguing; but when they had reached the ſummit, the king ſhewed them the reſidence of the robbers at ſome diſtance in the valley on the oppoſite ſide of the hill. Obadee, the volunteer Indian, who had accompanied the captain in his former voyage to the South, earneſtly diſſuaded him from proceeding, by telling him that they wanted only to decoy him; that there was no acceſs to thoſe Indians but through a ſteep and narrow paſs, in which two men only could go a-breaſt, and that there they might be deſtroyed with ſtones while their fire-arms could be of little ſervice. Upon this honeſt repreſentation, the captain gave over the purſuit, and all returned, ſufficiently chagrined with their day's exploit. In the mean while, the people on board had loaded all their guns great and ſmall, to be prepared in caſe of an attack from the ſhore in their abſence. The captain returned on board with his aſſociate king Oree, who brought with him a hog for dinner ready dreſſed.

The

Digitized by Google

The 22d the ſhip being ſupplied with wood and water, the captain gave orders to put to ſea.

The 23d, king Oree being on board, and after mutual preſents had been exchanged, and many demonſtrations of affection and friendſhip from his majeſty, he took leave, weeping as if he had been parting from his kingdom.

But while the chiefs were with ſome reluctance diſpatched, it was not ſo eaſy to clear the ſhip from the women; they all wanted preſents before they departed, and when they were driven up one hatchway, they ran down another, crying and bellowing as if nothing but ruin attended their return to ſhore. It is not impoſſible, indeed, but that if they returned empty handed, they might meet with a cool reception from their old friends and connections, and that the fear of being deſpiſed for not making a better market might induce them to be ſo incorrigibly troubleſome: however, when things came to the laſt extremity, and they ſaw the ſhip unmoored, and the ſails ſpread, they betook themſelves to their canoes, though they afterwards made a terrible bellowing as they rowed away.

On the 24th they arrived at Ulietea without any think remarkable intervening, except that Mara, the gunner's mate, who had been laid

Digitized by Google

laid in irons for endeavouring to make his eſcape on ſhore at the ſhip's departure from Otaheite, was releaſed from his irons, and made priſoner at large, with a centinel to attend him; but on his arrival in port he was again put in irons.

The 25th the captain went aſhore and viſited the king and royal family. The queen, upon ſeeing him, inſtantly fell into a fit of phrenſy, ſtriking herſelf with a ſhark's tooth till the blood run from her in ſtreams. It is not only their cuſtom to expreſs grief in this manner; but here it was the ſudden tranſport of joy that impelled her, and ſhe embraced the captain with open arms. After a ſhort ſtay, exhibiting a ſcene of mutual careſſes, the captain returned on board with the queen, and a beautiful young princeſs, her daughter. They were ſcarce on board when all the girls in the bay were ready to enter, and it was abſolutely neceſſary to keep out the men, to avoid confuſion.

The trade commenced directly, but nothing was ſo much demanded as red feathers; ſo that the captain found it neceſſary to order the men abaft, and to forbid them to traffic with red feathers, as it ſpoiled the proviſion trade. Some fire-works were this day diſplayed for the entertainment of the queen and royal family. Mr. Foſter was now indefatigable in his reſearches after the natural productions

Digitized by Google

ductions of the country; and in this iſland he was permitted to range without fear or moleſtation.

27. This day the coopers being ordered on ſhore to clean and repair ſome leaky water-caſks, one of them loſt his adze, which was ſtolen from him while he was at dinner; and as he never was able to recover it, he was puniſhed with twelve laſhes for his neglect.

The 28th the gentlemen were invited by the king to a play. Their plays conſiſt of three diſtinct modes of action; muſic, dancing, and farce. Their muſic is but mean, except their ſinging, which is plaintive and ſweet; their dancing inimitable; and their farce not inferior or unlike to the drolls at Bartholomew-Fair. In ſhort, they are very diverting, and the gentlemen were not only pleaſed with their day's diverſion, but with the charms of ſome of the performers, who were the king's daughters, and decorated with flowers and ornaments ſo prettily interwoven with their hair, as to add a grace to their natural beauty. Nevertheleſs, the diſtorted mouths the male performers are taught to make in varying the attitudes of their war dances, are ſo inimitably ugly, that none of the ſailors, ſome of whom are excellent mimicks, could copy them.

The 29th the pinnace and large cutter being moored every night at the buoy, as ſoon as

Digitized by Google

as it was light it was diſcovered that the rudders and tillers of both veſſels were miſſing. The captain ordered the coxſwain of the pinnace in irons for his careleſſneſs, and immediately went on ſhore to recover the loſs: upon farther enquiry, he was told, that the boat's grapnel was gone, as was likewiſe the boat hook. On complaining to the king, his majeſty aſſiſted the captain in the diſcovery of the thieves, and, after diligent enquiry, the perſon who had ſtolen the grapnel was found out, and it was recovered; the perſons who had taken the rudders were alſo diſcovered; but one of the rudders was found ſplit to get at the iron-work, the other was returned without injury. The tiller of the pinnace and the boat's hook never were heard of: but in the room of them a large hog was brought, together with an immenſe heap of bread fruit. About ſix the coxſwain was releaſed from his irons, as it was not in the power of man to guard againſt all the ſtratagems of the natives to ſteal iron.

The 30th the pinnace and launch went to the ſouth ſide of the iſland with the gentlemen on board, to pay a viſit to the friends of Obadee, and to reſtore him in ſafety. The captain was cautious of taking him to England, as he was not certain that any Britiſh ſhip would again be ſent to viſit the iſland, and he was unwilling to confine him in Europe.

On

Digitized by Google

On June the 3d, the captain entertained the royal family, in return for their plays, with a diſplay of fire-works, played off from a little iſle about 100 yards from the ſhore, where they had the happieſt effect imaginable, and were beheld with the greateſt admiration by the inhabitants for many miles up the country.

June 4, preparations were this day made for putting to ſea, and in the afternoon a breeze ſpringing up fair, after taking leave of the royal family, and leaving them all in tears, and after entruſting a letter with Obidee to be given to captain Furneaux, if he ſhould happen to touch at that iſland, they weighed anchor, and ſet ſail. The number of hogs which were purchaſed being greater than they could find room for alive, they ventured to kill ſome of them to ſalt, but they proved very indifferent meat.

The 5th at twelve, they came in ſight of a ſmall iſland bearing, N. N. W. diſtance about five leagues.

The 6th they ſaw ſeveral tropic birds and ſome land birds. At half after ten perceived a ſmall low iſland bearing W. half S. full of cocoa nuts, but ſurrounded with a reef.

The 16th, the lat. at noon was 18 deg. 6 min. long. 168 deg. 36 min. E. and at one, being pretty near up with the land, they diſ-

Digitized by Google

covered seven small islands full of cocoa-nut trees, surrounded with a reef, but saw no sign of any inhabitants; the whole circumference they computed to be about eight leagues. Finding no entrance for ship or boat, they pursued their course W. by S.

The 20th, at five they hauled up S. by E. thinking they saw another island, shortened sail, and lay off and on all night; and about nine the next morning got close under the island, but found the coast craggy: the country, however, appeared to be full of trees, and on the S. E. side of it they perceived them loaded with cocoa-nuts: they saw also plantain and banana-trees in squares, as if planted by line. Being not above a mile from the shore, many of the natives were observed to be in motion, and in less than an hour the beach was crouded with them. Sounding for anchorage, they found no bottom; they therefore proceeded with an easy sail along the North shore from W. to S. W. The N. E. part of the island is pretty round. Lat. at noon 18 deg. 55 min. S.

Being now arrived at the West side of the island, they again saw several of the natives in motion, with large clubs and spears in their hands. The captain ordered the pinnace and large cutter to be hoisted out, armed and well manned; and, taking several of the principal officers and gentlemen, he landed and took possession of the island for his Britannic Majesty

jeſty King George the Third; hoiſting at the ſame time an union jack, and giving it the name of Prince Frederick's Iſland, in honour of his Majeſty's ſecond ſon. When the ceremony was over, one of the gentlemen received a ſevere blow on the left arm with a ſtone from an inviſible hand. Looking up to the top of the rocks, which almoſt roſe perpendicularly, they perceived a company of the natives almoſt over their heads, the foot of the rock not being more than 30 feet from the edge of the water. Seeing the ſavages have ſo much advantage over them, they judged it prudent to take to their boats, in which they continued to coaſt along the ſhore, in order to diſcover a more convenient place to land; nor was it eaſy to find a place leſs dangerous than that which they had juſt left. The next attempt they made to land had almoſt proved fatal to the captain: a ſavage from the rocks threw his ſpear with ſurpriſing force, directing it at the captain, but happily he ſaw it coming juſt time enough to ſtoop and let it fly over his head, and when it fell, it grazed the thigh of one of the gentlemen that ſtood behind. The ſignal was then given to fire upon them, which was kept up for ſome time, during which ſome of them dropped, and the reſt fled into the woods, and were no more ſeen, making, however, a dreadful howling and yelling, as if calling together their whole force. The captain finding nothing to be got here without a deal of bloodſhed, and hazard-

Digitized by Google

ing the lives of his people to no good purpoſe, thought proper to embark, and to continue his courſe in ſearch of a more hoſpitable people to recruit his ſtores. The ſavages of this iſland were a fierce looking people, ſome with ſhock, and others with long black hair tied round their heads, and adorned with feathers. Their complexion was a bright ſhining black, made ſo by art, as their thighs were of a dark copper colour. They were nimble and active, ſtout and reſolute; and were not eaſily diſperſed even when the great ſhot was fired amongſt them.

The 25th continuing their courſe, at half paſt five, they ſaw land from beam to beam. Courſe W. by S. It proved a cluſter of iſlands, ſome very large, and others ſmall.

The 26th they directed their courſe for the longeſt iſle. Several canoes came from the iſles promiſcuouſly, bringing plantains, bread-fruit, yams and fiſh. The people in all reſpects reſembled the Amſterdamers. At noon they caſt anchor on the north ſide of the iſland, about half a mile from the ſhore in 21 fathom water, red ſand, broken ſhells, and ſmall ſtones; and preſently hoiſted out the large cutter, and ſteadied the ſhip for the convenience of trade. In the afternoon one of the natives got hold of the lead-line, and was making off with it towards the ſhore; but being diſcovered, was ſhot at, brought back and the line

Digitized by Google

line reſtored. Shaddocks, and yams, were brought in plenty.

The 27th many of the natives came off with hogs, fowls, fiſh, and fruit, but none were admitted on board, nor any of their women, on account of the diſorders contracted at Otaheite, which ſtill remained uncured. The common men were likewiſe forbidden to trade with the natives, to avoid quarrels. About ſeven in the morning the captain and maſter went in the pinnace, attended by a company of marines, in ſearch of water, and ſoon returned, having found a watering place, but the water brackiſh. About nine the empty water-caſks were ſent on ſhore in the launch; and the pinnace and cutter went to trade, and in leſs than half an hour came back loaded; but in the hurry the ſurgeon loſt his fowling piece. It was here obſerved, as at Amſterdam, that many of the natives were without their little finger; that many of them had ſcars in the upper part of their cheeks, and others had ſeveral circles, one within another, on their arms, as if branded. They learned that theſe were ſigns of mourning.

The 28th in the morning, they diſcerned from the maſt-head two large iſlands to the northward, at the diſtance of 16 or 17 leagues. The low iſland the Indians called Taſ-Iua; and the peeked iſland, they called E-

Digitized by Google

ka-u u. At ſix the launch was ſent for water: when ſhe landed the natives came about her in ſwarms, and one of them ſeized a cartouch-box full of ammunition; others wreſted the ſecond lieutenant's fowling-piece from him; and others ſeized the cooper's bucket, with his adze and a quantity of bungs in it, and inſtantly made off. The boat's crew fired at them, and they dropped the bucket; but kept the adze, the fowling-piece, and the cartouch-box. They ſeemed indeed in leſs fear of fire-arms than any ſavages they had yet met with; for the fellow who took the cartouch-box, ſeized the nozzle of the gun which the ſoldier was about to point at him, directed it from him, and by that means got clear off with his booty. To oblige them to reſtore their plunder, the captain cauſed a large ſailing canoe to be ſeized, to which they made ſome oppoſition. On the approach of the party commanded on that ſervice, of which the captain himſelf was the leader, the ſavages, all but one man, jumped over-board: but it was not till the veſſel was hauled upon the beach, that he could be prevailed upon to quit his property; and when he did, he made towards the captain, brandiſhing a deſperate weapon over his head, and with the other hand clapping his breech. Signs were made to him in vain to lay it down, 'till the captain preſenting his piece at him, he dropped it on the ground; but the inſtant that the piece was taken from the captain's ſhoulder, he ſnatched up his weapon,

Digitized by Google

pon, and advanced as before. The captain was obliged, in his own defence to fire, but being unwilling to kill ſo brave a fellow, took aim where he could leaſt injure him, and ſhot him in the thighs. The gun was loaded with ſwan ſhot, one of which pierced the very hand with which he was denouncing defiance; he then ran howling to the woods; and preſently five or ſix of his companions came with him upon their backs, and ſeemed to ſupplicate relief. The ſurgeon very humanely dreſſed his wounds, applying to them a remedy he had learned among the Indians of ſcraped ſugar-cane ſpread upon a certain leaf. This rencounter rendered them very peaceable, and they ſoon reſtored the fowling-piece and adze. The water being bad, the captain, not to loſe time, ordered the boats to be hoiſted in, and the ſhip to ſet ſail. This iſland, our journaliſts ſay, was called by the natives Anamocka; the ſame to which Taſman gave the name of Rotterdam.

The 29th, they directed their courſe to the large iſlands which they had deſcried the day before, and kept on ſounding all the way from 60 to 39 fathom water. The natives followed the ſhip all day with proviſions to trade.

The 30th about one in the afternoon they approached the iſlands. On the loweſt and weſternmoſt of the two, a continual ſmoke iſſued from a hill, the eaſternmoſt end of which they

Digitized by Google

they imagined contained a burning mountain, which they were not long after convinced of. When at the diſtance of three leagues, the ſhip's courſe N. W. by W. the two iſlands appeared, lat. at noon 19 d. 55 m. About five in the afternoon they were in full ſail between the iſlands, the loweſt of which the Indian traders who followed the ſhip called Tuſſua. It appeared in ſome places ſo burnt, that they could plainly diſcover from the ſhip by the appearance of trees, how far the conflagration had reached. As ſoon as they were to leeward of the burning mountain, though it was not juſt then raging, the people could perceive by the ſmart of their eyes when they looked to windward, that the very air was impregnated with ſulphureous atoms.

On July the 2d, at half an hour after eleven, they diſcovered land, bearing about W. by N. half N. and bore away towards it, ſteering to N. W. Lat. at noon 20 deg. 6 min. It appeared to be full of trees; but when they approached it, found it reefed all round. But in the morning the large cutter was ſent to ſound and examine the ſhore. On her return the officer on board reported that no anchorage was practicable; and after examining the coaſt for a conſiderable way, and attempting in vain to get ſome turtle, of which there was reaſon to ſuppoſe there were many about the iſland, they made ſail, and purſued their

Digitized by Google

their courſe. On this iſland they ſaw ſeveral natives, but none came on board.

On the 16th they bore away in the ſame direction. Lat. at noon 15 deg. 7 min. and directed their courſe W. half S. At three they ſaw land from the maſt-head, bearing W. S. W. prodigious high, not more than eight leagues diſtant, the weather being hazy prevented their ſeeing it before. It blowing a ſtorm they neared it faſt, but could not venture in with the land. It appeared very pleaſant and full of trees. At eight in the evening wore ſhip, and bore away to the N. E.

The 18th at ſeven in the morning they bore away W. by S. for the north-weſt end of the iſland. At half paſt eight they ſaw from the maſt-head two large iſlands, bearing S. E. by E. full of trees, and much like the moſt fruitful parts of New-Zealand, with ſeveral caſcades, and rivulets of water, which made them deſirous of reaching the ſhore. At noon they were within hearing of the natives, but could neither diſcern bay, ſound, or harbour to anchor in.

The 19th they tacked, and ſtood for the land. Between the firſt and ſecond iſles, they could plainly perceive a ſtrait or paſſage; but the wind blowing right out, they continued working from one iſle to the other, endeavouring to get in 'till they could plainly hear the

the ſavages cry wyhanna, heea, waving their hands at the ſame time, as if inviting them to come to land.

Mean while two or three canoes came out; but it blowing hard, could not venture along ſide. The people were of a dark copper colour, ſhock haired, with no other cloathing, than a white ſaſh round the waiſt, the ties of which hung down before, and reached to the middle of the thigh. About eleven at night, they got ſome diſtance within the two large iſlands that formed the ſtraits, and kept tacking every two hours the whole night.

The 20th in the morning they could perceive that they had gained conſiderably in the night, owing to the current which ſet to the windward; and could likewiſe ſee four iſlands very high and extenſive. They were ſoon cloſe under the ſouth end of the largeſt iſland, where they ſaw multitudes of the inhabitants, who lined the rocks bellowing and howling, and ſaw alſo many ſmokes within land. At eleven they came in ſight of a large and high iſland from the maſt-head, lying to windward.

The 21ſt they tacked and ſtood for the high iſland. At ten they came in ſight of two other large iſles, one of which was a volcano. Being come near one of thoſe iſles, great numbers of ſavages preſented themſelves, armed with clubs, ſpears, and bows and arrows. At one

Digitized by Google

one they tacked and ſtood in for a pleaſant bay in the iſle which lies at the Weſt end of that whereon is the burning mountain. At four they ſounded, and an hour after the ſhip came to an anchor in nine fathom water, fine ſandy bottom. She was ſcarce moored before the natives came off in their canoes from the Eaſt ſide of the bay, and many ſwam from the Weſt ſide; the diſtance not being above a quarter of a mile. They were of the negroe kind, quite black and woolly headed, poor deſpicable looking wretches, but armed with bows and poiſoned arrows, with every one a club made of hard wood ſlung over his ſhoulders. They were quite naked, except a girdle, or piece of matting, tied round the waiſt, and drawn ſo tight that it was with difficulty that a finger could be thruſt between it and the ſkin: they wear, beſides, on one wriſt a piece of wood or bone, ſo nicely jointed that it is not eaſy to diſcover the ſeam: this too was preſſed ſo tight that many imagined it muſt have been put on when they were very young, and that the wriſt had grown up to it; for, being curiouſly emboſſed, it was at firſt thought to be one piece, and nobody ſuſpected to find a joint. Some of them were marked on their bodies, but very different from any they had before ſeen; for, inſtead of being ſmooth, and ſeemingly indented within the ſkin, their marks appeared rough and raiſed above it. As ſoon as they approached the ſhip, or came near any of the crew, they

ſprinkled

Digitized by Google

ſprinkled water over their heads, patted their heads with their open hands, crying Towmarrow, Towmarrow; but offering no kind of rudeneſs. They kept about the ſhip, with lights, after it was dark, and having ſatisfied their curioſity, they quietly departed. Their boats were of a very particular form, being raiſed higher in the middle than at either end.

22. Great numbers of them attended the ſhip, and ſome came on board. At firſt they ſhewed no diſpoſition to miſchief, but leaped about, admiring every thing they ſaw. Being unwilling, however, to go away, and many of them preſſing to be admitted at once, they were oppoſed, which brought on a quarrel, and ſeveral of them ſhot their arrows from their canoes, againſt which the crew were upon their guard. The marines were then ordered to fire, and in a ſhort time the ſhip was cleared from ſuch unwelcome viſitors. One of the fellows, however, in going off diſcharged an arrow againſt one of the officers; but his life paid for his audacity. In the afternoon, the captain ordered out the pinnace, and with a party of marines, well armed, went on ſhore. The natives ſeeing them land made a halt, and ſtood quite ſtill. The captain, willing to make friends of them, ſhewed them ſome articles of European manufacture, and ſome Indian; and made ſigns for them to lay aſide their weapons, and ſit down, which they obeyed. Then going up to them, he preſented

Digitized by Google

lented their chief with a few trifles, with which he ſeemed very much pleaſed; he next acquainted them that the ſhip was in want of water, but they either did not, or would not underſtand him. The captain ſeeing there was none to be gotten without bloodſhed, nor any wood to be had but what was as hard as brazil, returned on board, and prepared to ſail. None of theſe people brought either fleſh or fruit to diſpoſe of; nor could any more than one lean hog be procured, though there were many to be ſeen. Their women appeared conſiderably uglier than the men. The fellows who firſt entered the ſhip were earneſt with the ſailors to expoſe themſelves, but being refuſed with the true ſpirit of Britiſh tars, their reſentment was firſt excited by the manner in which they were repulſed: they continued, however, peaceable during the reſt of the time the ſhip ſtaid here, and the gentlemen and fiſhers purſued their fiſhing without moleſtation. At ten they catched a ſhark about twelve feet long: in hauling him near the boat, he gave a ſudden plunge, and, ſeizing the ſtem in his mouth, left two of his teeth buried in the wood, and it was with the utmoſt danger and difficulty that five of the boat's crew could get the better of him. In diſſecting his head for one of the gentlemen to preſerve his jaw bones, three inches of an Indian arrow was found buried in his brains.

Digitized by Google

The 23d, they weighed and got clear out of the bay by towing, the Indians following in their canoes. Several of the gentlemen fell ſick, as imagined, by eating the large red ground fiſh which they had caught in the bay: they were confirmed in this opinion by the dogs being taken ill that had eaten the fragments; and one of the hogs that had taken what the dogs brought up, actually died; and being opened, the liver and inteſtines were turned quite black. Though the people had no notion of trade, yet the ſailors prevailed on ſome of them to part with their bows and arrows, in exchange for beads and other trifles; but their ſpears nothing could purchaſe. From the circumſtances of the gentlemen's ſickneſs, and the natives poiſoned arrows, the captain named this bay Venomous-Bay.

The 24th at ſix they made ſail, and at nine ſaw four unknown iſlands, ſurrounded with a reef; a number of ſmall iſlands being in ſight the whole day.

The 26th they could ſee from the decks the natives of ſeveral iſles running along the beaches to look at the ſhip.

On the 27th they came in ſight of four new iſlands, none of which had been noticed before. Lat. 18 deg. 20 min.

The

Digitized by Google

The 28th at six in the morning tacked, and stood in for the land. At noon tacked, and stood to the Eastward for two or three strange islands that appeared at a great distance. Lat. 18 deg. 29 min. At four tacked, and stood to the westward. Saw land bearing South. The gentlemen who had been poisoned with the fish pretty well recovered.

On the 30th they saw still more islands almost in every direction; they being now in what is called in our maps the Archipelago of the Great Cyclades, and of which till now we had a very vague account.

The 31st they caught two large sharks, one of which had five small turtle in his belly, one eighteen inches long and twelve broad; the other had three or four bonettas of considerable size.

August 1, the ship bore away S. by W. round the North West end of an island about four or five leagues to the windward. At four in the afternoon several of the natives were seen, who appeared in every respect the same as the savages in Venomous-Bay. They made signs for the voyagers to land, by waving green boughs, the emblems of peace, and some of them jumped into the water, and made for the ship; but making way, they were soon distanced.

The 2d about nine in the morning they ſent the cutter to examine the ground, but ſhe ſoon returned without finding anchorage. They then bore away to the north eaſtward to an iſland they had already paſſed, and the next day anchored in 10 fathom water, rocky ground. Numbers of the natives came ſwimming towards the ſhip; but on the boats being hoiſted out, they all made to land again. Their yellings were uncommon from any they had yet heard.

The 4th, early in the morning, the pinnace and large cutter went off to examine the coaſt, and to endeavour to find out a convenient place to wood and water. At half paſt ſeven the ſhip was alarmed by a continual firing from the boats on the ſhore, and immediately fired a ſwivel gun loaded with grape ſhot, and ſent the ſmall cutter well manned and armed to the aſſiſtance of the boats already engaged; at the ſame time keeping a continual fire with grape-ſhot. Soon after this the boats returned with advice, that they had ſcarce touched the ground when the ſavages attacked them, and endeavoured to haul the boats into the woods; that one of the boatſwain's mates was run through the cheek with a ſpear, which was thrown from the land; that one of the ſailors was wounded in the thigh in two places by a like weapon; that the maſter, who commanded, was alſo wounded in the breaſt with an arrow, the point of which very fortunately

nately broke in piercing his clothes, otherwiſe it muſt have penetrated his heart; and that ſome others had received very deſperete blows before their guns could be made uſe of; that, in return, they had deſtroyed ſeveral of the ſavages, and wounded many more; and by means of the ſuccours that had been ſent them, and the firing from the ſhip, had at length cleared the coaſt of them. This conflict continued above an hour, when ſhowers of arrows, ſpears, and ſtones from the buſhes, flew among the boats, but providentially no further hurt was received. As ſoon as the boats returned, the ſhip prepared to ſail, as no water was to be found in that bay, though it ſeemed to abound with every thing elſe. However, they fired a round ſhot among the ſavages upon the ſhore, and then ſtood out of the bay, in ſearch of a more hoſpitable people. At night a great body of fire iſſued from the burning mountain already mentioned, from whence they were not now at any conſiderable diſtance.

The 5th, they ſtood in for the iſland, on which the mountain was, and near the place they had before landed at. The bay they now diſcovered was ſituated at the S. S. W. part of the iſland, where the boats were ſent out to reconnoitre, and preſently brought account that there was ſafe anchorage in four fathom and a half water, abundance of freſh water on ſhore, with an appearance of great

Digitized by Google

plenty in every thing that was wanted, particularly of wood and fruit. This bay lay in and out N. N. E. and S. S. W. the burning hill bearing weſt half north. Having caſt anchor, ſeveral of the natives came off with cocoa-nuts, yams, bannanoes, plantains, &c. and one, an old man, brought on board a fowl, for a preſent to the captain. Thoſe who brought the fruit were afraid to approach the ſhip, therefore the captain ordered the ſmall cutter to be manned, and to row towards them; but even this ſeemed to terrify them. They made off from the boat, but threw ſome cocoa-nuts into it, for which they did not ſeem to expect any return. By the ſavages bringing, upon the approach of the ſhip, cocoa nuts, and other fruits, it ſhould ſeem that they imagined the ſtrangers to be a people like themſelves, come from ſome diſtant iſland to viſit them; and that therefore, it being uſual for ſuch viſitors to be in want of ſuch refreſhments, it might be the cuſtom for the inhabitants, upon their firſt coming, to ſupply them; but that when they ſaw a people totally unlike themſelves, it was but natural for them to retreat, not knowing their errand. Be this as it may, the ſhip was ſoon peſtered with great numbers of them, armed with the ſame weapons as the inhabitants of Venomous Bay before mentioned. There being now about 40 canoes gathered to aſſail the ſhip, they firſt began by endeavouring to cut away the buoy; but a few muſket balls whiſtling about

their

Digitized by Google

their ears, presently obliged them to keep aloof. They then began their war song, the signal to engage. To intimidate them, a four pounder was fired over their heads; at which they all jumped into the sea, and made towards the shore; but recovering themselves, and finding that no one had received any hurt, they again boarded their canoes, and advanced as before. It was then thought necessary to fire to effect, and two or three of their canoes being disabled by one shot, the rest fled hastily to shore; the boats followed, and in sight of thousands of them filled some casks of water, and returned to the ship.

The 6th the boats were ordered to land as before, but previously to that, the captain ordered a spring upon the cable to keep the ship's broad-side to the shore, to cover the waterers; and went himself in the pinnace to make peace with the natives. Finding them drawn up in two bodies, all armed and prepared for war, he caused a musket to be fired over their heads, and made the signal for them to lay down their arms, which they refused to do, with menaces if he dared to land. On this defiance, the signal was made for the ship to fire, which was instantly done with great guns, swivels, and wall-pieces, loaded with grape shot, which in less than a minute cleared the shore of all but two, one of whom was the old man who the day before had presented the captain with a fowl. The boats returned to the ship loaded

loaded with water, cocoa-nuts, and plantains, which, after they had felt the effects of the balls, they brought in abundance to the water's edge, laying them down, and running away, without waiting for any thing in exchange.

On the 7th, the natives assumed a new aspect; laying down their arms, and imploring peace, which was readily granted by the voyagers; and lines were marked out, over which they were not to pass. Peace being thus far established, the natives came down unarmed, bringing with them every production of the island, for which they received such articles of trade as they liked best. The fishers now began to fish without fear, and at three hauls of the seine, they caught above 500 mullet, many of them weighing 10 lb. a fish. The old Indian came frequently on board, and was well received by the captain. It appeared, that the body of Indians who intended to attack the ship were not the inhabitants about the bay, but people from another quarter, who finding themselves unequal to the undertaking, dispersed and retired every one to his own home. It was, however, thought prudent to be constantly on guard.

The 7th the captain's markee was set up on shore, the natives behaving with the utmost humility and respect.

During

During the whole time of their ſtay, the volcano roared in a moſt terrifying manner, ſometimes emitting vaſt torrents of flame and ſmoke that aſcended above the clouds; and ſometimes ſtones of ſuch an enormous ſize as to equal in bulk the ſhip's pinnace, which were thrown like pebbles to an incredible diſtance. The convulſions wherewith it was agitated before theſe bodies were ejected, ſeemd to ſhake the foundations of the iſland; and though the place where the ſhip lay was more than twelve miles diſtant, yet the aſhes, when the wind blew a breeze from the weſtward, would cover the decks like duſt.

The natives of this iſland are very black, but make themſelves ſtill blacker by painting their faces with a ſhining jet, interſperſed with red and white ſpots on their noſes and foreheads. Between their noſtrils they bore holes, which they keep open with a ſhort ſtick. They go naked, except a ſort of broad girdle round their waiſt, in which the men tie up in a very ſingular manner their marks of manhood, which by their way of dreſſing, appear of uncommon magnitude: in this conſiſts their pride. Their hair not being woolly, they tie in various modes: ſome let it flow down their ſhoulders; others fold it about their heads: others again twiſt it, and let it hang in plaits; while many of them cut it ſhort. They hoop and whiſtle to call their numbers together when they intend miſchief.

Their

Digitized by Google

Their women are paſſable when young, but frightful when they grow old. On their heads they wear a kind of bonnet, prettily matted, and round their waiſts a ſhort petticoat which reaches to their knees; this too is made of a kind of matting, for no cloth was ſeen among them: they paint themſelves differently as well as the men, but their favourite colour is red. The men were jealous of them, and never ſuffered any of them to appear alone. They generally kept behind the men; and moſt of thoſe that were of age had a child, or a bundle upon their backs; and were always merry, either ſhouting or laughing.

Like almoſt all the other iſlanders they are fond of working tools: the cooper's adze tempted them to watch an opportunity to ſteal it; which being miſſed, another fray commenced, and one of the ſavages bent his bow to ſhoot the man who was purſuing the thieves; but not being quick enough, the man ſhot him dead with the bow in his hand. The old Indian, however, who has often been mentioned, recovered the adze, and returned it to the cooper.

The water being here not above 30 or 40 yards from the ſhore, the caſks were filled almoſt as ſoon as they could be cleaned and repaired; and there being plenty of wood, theſe two neceſſary articles were fully compleated, and the ſhip's people were plentifully ſupplied with

Digitized by Google

with fiſh and fruit; but of pork, or other animal food, there was little to be had.

It is remarkable, that the natives of this iſland were ſcrupulous in taking any thing from the ſailors, and never would touch with their bare hands what was given them, but always received it between green leaves, which they afterwards tied up, and carried upon the ends of their clubs; and if ever any of the ſailors touched their ſkin, they always rubbed the part with the like green leaf. Notwithſtanding this delicacy, the ſailors underſtood by them that they eat one another; and one day ſome of the inhabitants of the bay invited the gentlemen to feaſt upon a man that they had barbiqued.

When theſe people are aſtoniſhed at any thing, they cry Hebow, and ſhake their right hand. They wear bracelets, like the Indians of Venomous Bay, in which they ſtick their hair-pricker, (an inſtrument which they uſe to dreſs their heads) and likewiſe the ſlings with which they throw their javelins; wherein they are very expert. One of them, to ſhew the commanding officer on ſhore what he could do, threw his ſpear without his ſling through a mark of four inches in diameter, at 20 yards diſtance: another of them in the preſence of the firſt lieutenant ſhot a fiſh as it ſwam along in the ſea at the diſtance of 26 yards, with a bow and arrow, which fiſh the lieute-

Digitized by Google

lieutenant carried on board with the arrow ſticking in its body.

Some of the gentlemen, one clear day, attempted to aſcend a hill at ſome diſtance, with intent to view the volcano more clearly, but were obliged to retire precipitately, the ground under them being as hot as an oven: the ſmell too was intolerably ſulphurous, proceeding from a ſmoke that iſſued through the fiſſures of the earth; yet from this ſmoke the natives find a remedy for cutaneous diſorders; the gentlemen having obſerved a man holding a child over the ſmoke, that was troubled with the itch.

While the people were employed in ſearching for ballaſt, they diſcovered water iſſuing from the crevices of a rock, hot enough to draw tea. Two of the ſhip's company, who were troubled with the rheumatiſm, went with the ſurgeon to bathe in the water, but found the ſtones underneath too hot to ſtand upon, without firſt plunging in ſome of their cold garments to keep the ſoles of their feet from touching them. In one place the waters were too hot to bear a finger in them: in another they were juſt hot enough to bear plunging the whole body in, without ſtaying there. What effect theſe waters had upon theſe two men has not been noted.

Ten days having elapſed, the natives began again to grow troubleſome, watching every oppor-

Digitized by Google

opportunity to level their arrows at the guard, and reſtrained only by the fear of their muſkets from proceeding to extremities. Perhaps ſome violence on the part of the ſtrangers might occaſion this ill humour among the natives. Having occaſion for ſome large timber to ſupply the decays of the ſhip, orders were given to cut down a tree of vaſt growth, and for the convenience of getting it on board to ſaw it into three pieces. This tree ſo divided, the natives eyed with pleaſure, imagining it would be left in compliment to them, as it ſuited exactly their ideas of conſtructing juſt double the number of canoes: but when they ſaw the ſailors employed in rolling down the body of the tree to the water's edge, they could not look pleaſed; and one of them was frequently ſeen to aim his ſpear at the labourers, but was reſtrained for fear of the guard: at length he watched his opportunity, and, ſtarting from behind a buſh, was levelling an arrow at the commanding officer, when he was diſcovered, and ſhot dead. The ball tore his arm to pieces, and entered his ſide. His companions inſtantly carried off the body, and laid it in the wood.

The ſhip's company were alternately permitted to go aſhore for their health; but the captain knowing the natives wanted an opportunity to revenge the death of their companions, ſtrictly enjoined them never to walk alone; nor to ſtray more than an hundred yards from the guard.

Digitized by Google

Though the people on this iſland were not like the Indians in the Society-iſles, fond of iron, they wiſhed indeed for ſome of the tools with which they ſaw the ſailors cut down wood; but except an adze or two, they never attempted to ſteal any thing. The coopers left their caſks during the night unguarded, and ſuffered their clothes to lie careleſsly about while they were at work. Theſe people diſcovered none of that diſpoſition to thievery ſo inherent in other Indian ſavages. In their courſe of trade, they totally diſregarded beads, and baubles, and preferred Rotterdam fiſh-hooks, and turtle-ſhell, to every thing elſe that was offered them. They were not eaſily perſuaded to part with their arms on any account. The produce of the iſland they freely parted with; but on whatever required labour in the conſtruction, they ſet a high value.

The iſlands of this Archipelago, are not eaſily numbered: upwards of ſeventy were counted at once, and inhabited by people of different natures and complexions. Some were woolly headed, and of the African race; others of a copper colour, like the New-Zealanders; and others were ſeen of the mulatto colour; and many of them like the natives of Rotterdam, of a browniſh black, with long hair and ſhorn beards. The high notions, however, that were entertained of the vaſt riches of theſe iſlands; of their abounding in pearls, ſilver ore, and precious ſtones, do not ſeem well

Digitized by Google

well founded: neither does the iſland of Menicola anſwer, by any means, the pompous deſcription given of it by the Spaniſh writers.

The courſe which captain Cook has lately compleated in 1775, has demonſtrated the non-exiſtence of a ſouthern continent, in the direction, in which Mr. Dalrymple ſo poſitively aſſers Quiros might have found it; and indeed, every other direction from the line to the 50th degree of ſouthern latitude, between which he has given it a place.

The courſe we are now tracing along with this able navigator, is the ſame that might have been proper for his examination in the winter of 1773, inſtead of ſailing to the eaſtward; but it is with pleaſure that we embrace this opportunity to diſclaim the leaſt intended cenſure, and to acknowledge the ſuperiority of his judgment, as by the courſe he took he has left no room for conjecture, reſpecting the great object he had in view, in any direction whatever. Having in 1770, ſailed to the ſouthward, in long. 213 deg. E. as far as the 41ſt degree of latitude; in 1773, he ſailed eaſtward in that latitude, from the 175th, to the 227th degree of eaſtern longitude, where having found himſelf nearly at an equal diſtance from the moſt ſoutherly point of his track from Otaheite to New-Zealand in 1770, and his track in the ſame latitude from Cape-Horn to Otaheite the ſame year, he tacked and

Digitized by Google

ſteered to the northward, till he fell in with all the beaten tracks of former navigators, and then directed his courſe for Otaheite. From Otaheite he widened his courſe, and viſiting Middleburgh and Amſterdam iſlands, he ſailed directly for New-Zealand; from whence, in the ſummer of that climate, he again took his departure, and extended his line, directing his courſe ſouthward, beyond the antarctic circle, ſtill ſteering a ſouth-eaſterly courſe, till he arrived at the 265th degree of eaſtern longitude, where changing his direction to the northward, he again made Otaheite his place of rendezvous, taking in his way the famous Eaſter-iſland of the Dutch, and determining the non-exiſtence of any other land, pretended to have been ſeen by Davis, or Juan Fernandez, in that quarter, and viſiting the Marqueſas of the Spaniards, which he found tolerably laid down and deſcribed.

Having refreſhed his men, and repaired his ſhip, at Otaheite, the range we are deſcribing was part of his third and laſt enterprize; in which we have already accompanied him to Anamaka, or Rotterdam Iſland, which he omitted to viſit in his former circuit, and from thence to that great country, of which ſo many fine things had been ſaid, and ſo many flattering conjectures credited.

The iſland on which captain Cook choſe to refit is ſituated in lat. 19 deg. 30 min S. and in

Digitized by Google

in long. 169 deg. 38 min. E. It is called by the natives Tanna, and the bay where the ſhip caſt anchor, Providence. Where the effects of the volcano did not reach, the iſland is fertile, abounding in various kinds of fruit, growing to a vaſt magnitude; a yam there exceeded 55 lb. in weight, and other fruits in proportion. The trees are alſo of an extraordinary ſize; but a wide circle in the interior part of the iſland, preſented nothing but a dreary waſte, covered with cinders, and tainting the air with ſulphur. The ſurrounding iſlands looked pleaſant to the eye; but are reported by the natives of Tanna, to abound in nothing but what they themſelves poſſeſſed.

Early on the 20th of Auguſt, the captain ſet ſail, and on the 21ſt directed his courſe round the South point of the iſle W. half N. This part of the iſland looked exceeding beautiful, as if cultivated from the tops of the higheſt hills to the loweſt vallies.

On the 22d, came abreaſt of the iſle called Harramango, where the quarrel happened in which a multitude of the inhabitants were killed, and where ſome of the ſhip's company were wounded, as has been already mentioned. Making ſail to the N. W. by N. about eleven they came in ſight of another iſland, very extenſive and pleaſant, which happened to be an iſland they had paſſed before, and

Digitized by Google

which they had diſtinguiſhed by the name of Lord Sandwich's Iſland.

The 23d they came in ſight of the famous iſle of Monicolo, and ſailed along ſhore N. W. and N. W. by N. It has a moſt beautiful appearance, full of plantations, and all of them well fenced. They were frequently ſo cloſe to ſhore that they could hear the natives hollow to them. Being arrived nearly at the weſt end, they diſcovered a paſſage (the ſame they had paſſed before two days after they had diſcovered theſe iſlands); and night approaching, they ſhortened ſail, and lay to. In the night many fires were ſeen on the iſland of Monicolo.

The 24th, directing their courſe N. N. W. through the ſtrait, the land to the weſtward ſeemed to be of great extent, and very delightful. At four in the afternoon, they obſerved another iſle, bearing N. half W.

On the 25th much land appeared to the W. and S. W. At eleven they entered a large deep bay; the land at each extremity of this bay is very high; and is named the bay of St. Philip and St. James, diſcovered by Mindana in 1595.

The 26th there being a fine breeze from the S. S. W. they ſtood pretty well into the bay, the entrance to which lies N. by W. and preſently hoiſted out the pinnace and large cutter,

in

in order to ſearch for anchorage, intending to exchange their water taken in at Tanna, which proved very bad. While the boats were employed in examining the coaſt, three canoes came cloſe by the ſhip, and ſtruck their ſails; but the men would not venture on board. Some medals, cloth, and nails were thrown to them; the laſt they joyfully accepted. In return they offered ſome plants of cinnamon trees, which they had in their boats. They uſed long ſpears, headed with the tail bones of the ſting-ray, but they did not manifeſt a miſchievous diſpoſition. They were black and woolly-headed, (which by no means anſwers the deſcription which Quiros gives of the inhabitants about the bay of St. Philip and St. James) and go naked, except a belt tied tight round their waiſts, in the ſame manner as the people before deſcribed. They are of the middle ſtature, wear bracelets, and ornament their heads with plumes of feathers like the inhabitants of New Zealand. About four o'clock in the afternoon the boats returned, without diſcovering a watering-place, or any ſafe anchorage within the bay: they ſaw, however, a large river, but no harbour within reach. Several of the inhabitants were in ſight, but very ſhy, and did not approach. Upon this intelligence they hoiſted the boats on board, and made ſail out of the bay.

Sept. the 4th they ſaw land, bearing about E. and S. by E. At twelve ſaw the land more plain, large, and extenſive.

One

On the 5th seeing 20 or 30 canoes standing towards the ship, they loaded the great guns, and prepared for defence in case of opposition. Having sent the pinnace and large cutter, to examine an opening which they observed in the reef, they returned, having found a clear passage, and very regular soundings, from eight and a half to five and a half fathoms water. At one the ship came to an anchor within half a mile of the land. In less than half an hour the ship was surrounded by the natives, armed for the greatest part with clubs, spears, and slings, the stones of which were of the size of an egg, smooth and round as if turned in an engine: they committed, however, no hostilities, and several were admitted on board. There were many of them flat nosed and woolly headed; of a middling stature, and naked, except about their waists. All the islanders seen in this Archipelago are nearly naked alike, having no other clothing but a girdle, sometimes of one fabric, sometimes of another, drawn tight about their middles, and so contrived as to cover them as low as the haunches. Some of these natives, like those of Easter-Island, have holes bored in their ears, and wear heavy ornaments in them, which draw them down to a disagreeable length; and some of them were punctured with sprigs of flowers and other figures upon their breasts, arms, and legs. Their chiefs wear large black caps, and have ornaments of bone, tortoiseshell, or mother of pearl, upon their arms.

Their

Digitized by Google

Their canoes are all double, and sail with two sails made of matting. They have a room across, by which they appear like large floating stages, and are capable of carrying a great number of men. They are not rowed with oars or paddles, but skulled along with long poles flatted at the ends, and let down through holes between the boats, and with these also they guide their vessels in sailing or turning. They use straps for their spears, such as are in use among the natives of Tanna, but finer wrought. From their many deep scars, they seem to be a warlike people: but it was observable, that many of them appeared broken bellied, and several of them blind of one eye.

The captain and several of the gentlemen went on shore to establish peace with the chiefs, who all seemed very well disposed; and when they returned, they expressed themselves well satisfied with their reception. Their houses were built in the form of bee-hives, with each two doors opposite one to the other, to let in the air, and let out the smoke, of which they stunk most abominably.

Their plantations are pleasant beyond belief, and are chiefly cultivated by the women, who also carry burdens. They are more slenderly covered in this island than in most of the others, and differ very little in that respect from the men, like whom they are mostly black and woolly headed.

The

Digitized by Google

The iſland cannot boaſt of fruit; but the gentlemen who went up into the country ſaw wild-fowl in abundance, as well as tame. The captain made the chief who welcomed him on ſhore, and who viſited him on board, a preſent of a ſow and boar, and of ſome other animals, males and females, of which they had none upon the iſland.

On the 6th, the aſtronomer, with the captain and officers, went to a ſmall iſle adjoining to the main to obſerve an eclipſe of the ſun, which happened between the hours of two and three in the afternoon; and it being a clear day, they had a fine opportunity of determining the time of its duration with the utmoſt exactneſs.

Having diſcovered a clear ſtream of running water, the carpenters and others were employed in cutting down trees, and buſhes, to make a rolling way to facilitate the labour of conveying the water to the ſea-ſide. This was of infinite uſe, and ſhortened the ſhip's ſtay ſeveral days.

One of the Indians ſtruck an uncommon fiſh with a ſpear, which was purchaſed by one of the officers, and preſented to the captain as a rarity, but it had the ſame effect with that eaten in Venomous-Bay.

8. Moſt of the people employed in watering.

9. The

9. The launch and large cutter were ſent to examine the coaſt, and to endeavour to find a paſſage for the ſhip, without going round the iſland.

10. The boats not returning, the captain began to be apprehenſive for their ſafety.

11. About eleven in the morning, the launch and large cutter were ſeen at a great diſtance beating up to recover the ſhip. About four in the afternoon ſome of the gentlemen, who went out in the boats, and who had travelled a conſiderable way over land, came on board, bringing account that the large cutter had ſprung a leak; and that the launch had carried away her fore yard; but that they had been fortunate enough to reach the ſhore. They likewiſe related the manner of their travelling acroſs the country, and of the civility they received from the natives wherever they came, in bringing them ſugar cane, and tarra-root, called by the natives coao. In their journey, they ſaw ſeveral of the burying places of their dead, which were equal in neatneſs and regularity to thoſe in the Society-iſles. In their plantations there were ſeveral low cocoa-nut-trees, as if but lately planted, and in the low marſhes, plenty of mangroves. In the woods they ſaw the ſigns of many fires, about which the ſhells of fiſhes were ſcattered; and conjectured from hence that the natives lived chiefly upon ſhell-fiſh, as neither bread-fruit, nor plantains ſeemed

Digitized by Google

ed to abound; and that thoſe yams that were brought to market were held very precious. Their bread is made of the tender ſhoots of a certain tree, reſembling liquorice root in colour and grain. Theſe ſtewed in an earthen pot taſte much the ſame as roaſted potatoes. In the evening the boats recovered the ſhip, after a very fatiguing voyage.

12. This day the captain ordered the following inſcription to be cut on a large tree: His Britannic Majesty's Ship Resolution 1774; and prepared every thing for ſailing.

Accordingly at ſix next morning they weighed anchor, and made ſail with the wind E. S. E. ſteering to clear a paſſage between the reefs, by which they entered the harbour: and at ſeven at night two more iſlands came in ſight, one bearing S. W. the other W. by N. but it was not till the 21ſt that they cleared the land. This iſland muſt therefore be of conſiderable extent. It does not appear that any European veſſel ever before viſited this iſland, to which captain Cook gave the name of New Caledonia; it is ſituated partly between the 19th and 22d degree of ſouth latitude, and in long. 165 deg. 50 min. E. and at a diſtance appears very lofty and mountainous. Its extent from north to ſouth full 90 leagues. From eaſt to weſt unknown.

On

Digitized by Google

On the 24th, about four in the afternoon, ſteering E. S. E. they came in ſight of two ſmall iſles off the Eaſt point of the great iſland.

On the 25th they bore away S. by W. and ſaw ſeveral ſmall iſles to the eaſtward of the main. Theſe iſles were full of trees, and ſome of them had the appearance of ſtatues, ſuch as were ſeen on Eaſter-Iſland. Caught two ſharks that were beſpoke before taken. The ſailors, who are not accuſtomed to dainties, found the fleſh of theſe creatures, when cleared of the fat, very good meat; and the inteſtines not much inferior to haſelet, which by ſome is accounted a delicacy. Hoiſted out the ſmall cutter to try the current, but found none. Light breezes from the land. Tacked every two hours during the night.

26. Saw great flocks of birds, but at ſuch a diſtance as not to be able to diſtinguiſh to what claſs they belonged. Stood to S. W.

The 27th, ſtanding cloſe under the iſle ſeen on the 23d to the eaſtward of the main, it preſented a moſt beautiful landſcape; the trees ſeemed ranged in lines, and being nearly of a height, and the hills and lawns diverſifying the proſpect, nothing could appear more delightful, except that water was wanting to compleat the ſcene.

Digitized by Google

On the 28th High Land being diſcovered, they made for it. At four ſaw breakers almoſt all round them. Tacked, and ſtood to the north, that being the cleareſt paſſage; and ſteered to N. E. and N. E. by N. when they ſounded, and got every thing in readineſs to caſt anchor in forty fathom water: but the wind blowing hard, and the breakers and ſhoals multiplying about them, preſented nothing but danger; it was therefore determined to bear away, and to take ſhelter under the lee of a ſmall iſle about four leagues from the High Land, where they dropped anchor in thirty-nine fathom water, fine ſhelly bottom.

On the 29th the captain and gentlemen went on ſhore, and found that the iſland was frequented by the Indians, who had made many fires in the woods, about which lay ſcattered the bones and ſhells of fiſh: they ſaw likewiſe two canoes buried in the ſand upon the beach, and the calipee of a turtle at ſome diſtance from the water's edge. They found no water upon the iſland; but, after a fruitleſs ſearch, returned on board very much fatigued: the carpenters, however, were ſent on ſhore, who cut eight or nine ſtraight ſpars, which were much wanted to make ſome neceſſary repairs in the maſts and rigging.

On the 30th they weighed anchor, and narrowly eſcaped tumbling upon a ſunken rock, which they diſcovered juſt under their lee bow.

Steering

Steering to the South-East, they discovered that the High Land already mentioned was a part of New Caledonia, which they discovered on the 4th instant: they therefore kept on their course.

Oct 1. Sailed with great caution, the sea being full of reefs and sunken rocks At ten they lost sight of land, and then made all the sail they could E. by S. Tacked, and stood to the S. W. and at twelve tacked again, and stood to the eastward, probably in search of some new land.

The 8th, at twelve at noon stood S. W. by S. At five they struck a small porpoise, as the sailors imagined: but, having pursued and brought it aboard, the naturalists were divided; and, by the most knowing, it was said to be an ancient dolphin.

The 9th, course this day W. S. W. struck another of the above fish, and broke the harpoon in him close to the sockets. The former being dressed proved very good meat.

The 10th, at five in the morning came in sight of land, bearing about S. and S. S. W. at six it appeared high and full of trees; they neared it very fast, and all the morning were employed in working under the lee of the isle: at one, being close by it, they hoisted out the pinnace and large cutter, and the captain with

Digitized by Google

two of his lieutenants went on ſhore to reconnoitre the coaſt, and at the ſame time taking the carpenter's crew along with them to fell ſome trees, of which there were in abundance large enough for maſts for third-rate men of war, and others fit for yards, boltſprits, and all other uſes about the ſhip. They met with no inhabitants, nor any obſtruction whatever. The woods abounded with parrots and parroquets, pidgeons, and other birds; but they found no water. The iſland appeared broken and barren in many places; but in the vallies between the hills nothing could look more beautiful. The boats at five in the afternoon came in from the ſhore, the carpenters having felled what trees were wanted for uſe, which being ſhipped on board, the boats were hoiſted in, and the ſhip ſtretched away to the eaſtward, with intent to go to the windward of the iſle. In this courſe they paſſed a ſmall uninhabited iſland, on which there grew abundance of cabbage trees; of theſe the ſhip's crew made the proper uſe. About eight in the evening the middle of the large iſland bore ſouth, half weſt, ſix or ſeven leagues.

On the 11th, ſtill endeavoured to get to the windward of the iſland. Wind at E. and S. by E. Courſe South. At ten the two iſles made into one, latitude at noon 29 deg. 27 min. But the breeze favouring, they purſued their courſe, after giving a name to the iſland, and calling it Norfolk Iſle.

On

On the 17th came in ſight of land, bearing S. E. by E. half E. It proved to be Cape-Egmont, in New-Zealand, almoſt covered with ſnow. In the afternoon the ſouthern land appeared.

On the 18th at two wore ſhip and ſtood to the ſouthward. At eleven in a few ſeconds of time the wind varied all round the compaſs. At twelve they brought too in Charlotte-Sound in New-Zealand, within a mile and half of their former birth, when ſending the cutters on ſhore, to ſee if the bottle had been removed, that was left with directions for the Adventure, word was brought back, that the tree under which it was depoſited, had been cut down, and the bottle taken away, but whether by the natives, or by the Adventure's crew, they could not determine. They hauled the ſeine, but could catch no fiſh; but gathered ſcurvy-graſs and wild celery in plenty, which were to the full as acceptable. Here is wild fowl in abundance, and the crew being almoſt all in good health, they were little leſs rejoiced than if they had arrived on the coaſt of England.

The 19th, they moored the ſhip, and ſent the tents aſhore; began to cut down wood and prepare for watering; it was a matter of wonder that none of the natives came in ſight. They perhaps imagined that the ſhip was come to revenge the death of the Adventure's men,

Digitized by Google

whom they had killed and eaten; but being ſoon relieved from that apprehenſion, they came about the ſhip as uſual, bringing fiſh, and whatever elſe the iſland produced, and behaving apparently with friendſhip.

The ſhip's tents being pitched, and all hands employed in various neceſſary repairs, the gentlemen reconnoitred the country, and the captain ſurveyed the Sound, in which he diſcovered a paſſage leading into the main ocean through ſeveral channels, 12 or 13 leagues from the entrance of the Sound. While the pinnace was employed in this diſcovery, ſhe was dogged the whole day by a large double canoe, which however did not dare to attack her, though encouraged by the ſavages on ſhore, who heaved ſtones at the pinnace, but without effect.

The gentlemen, who went out a-ſhooting, found a hog upon Long-Iſland, left there, as was ſuppoſed, by the Adventure; ſhe was very wild, and took to the woods as ſoon as diſcovered. Several of the crew went afterwards to hunt her, but to no purpoſe.

During their intercourſe with the natives, they were given to underſtand that a ſhip had been caſt away upon the coaſt; and that the natives had overcome the people, and killed and eat them.

Juſt

Juſt before their departure, ſeveral ſtrange Indians came rowing down the Sound, having a variety of articles to diſpoſe of; ſome curiouſly wrought in jaſper, ſome in wood, and not a few in reeds and matting. Some of their country cloth they brought likewiſe and exchanged for Otaheite cloth, and cocoa-nut ſhells, of which laſt they were very fond, and of which there were ſome thouſands on board. Theſe ſavages had with them ſeven or eight young red-painted blue-lip'd cannibal ladies, who were by no means unwilling to be introduced to the company of ſuch of the ſhip's crew as fancied them. The gunner's mate, who had been confined in irons for endeavouring to leave the ſhip at Otaheite, was here puniſhed with twelve laſhes for going aſhore without leave, in purſuit of one of thoſe beauties.

After ſtaying in this harbour from the 19th of October, till the 10th of November, and after taking in their full quantity of wood and water for a long run, they weighed anchor, and made ſail with a fine breeze, blowing right out of the harbour.

On the 12th of November they cleared the land, and ſteering a S. S. E. courſe, till they came into the 53d degree of ſouthern latitude, they continued in that parallel nearly till they came in ſight of land between the ſtraits of Magellan and Cape-Horn. In this long run, and in this high latitude, they met with not the leaſt

leaſt obſtruction; they were favoured by wind and weather; for, from the time of their departure on the 12th of November, till their ſeeing land on the 17th of December, the weather, conſidering the climate, was moderately warm, and wind not unfavourable.

On the 16th of November, being in lat. 49 deg. 33 min. the captain ordered canvas to be nailed all round the hatchways, to defend the crew, as much as poſſible, from the ſeverity of the cold, in the climate they were about to navigate; and took every other precaution that was in his power for the preſervation of the health of all his men.

On the 17th of December came in ſight of land, which proved the ſouth ſide of Terra del Fuego, very rugged and full of ſnow. There appeared, however, a great many iſles and entrances; but the whole country preſented neither tree nor ſhrub.

On the 18th, being in lat. 53 deg. 51 min. they came in ſight of a flock of birds that extended for more than two miles.

The 19th, on coaſting the ſhore, at the diſtance of about five or ſix leagues, it ſtill appeared craggy and mountainous, and covered with ſnow; no trees or buſhes, but the rocks reſounding with the cries of ſea fowl, and birds of various kinds. At ten in the morning

ing ſounded in 45 fathom water, coarſe gravel. At half paſt four in the afternoon, tacked, and ſtood right in for the ſhore, ſome part of which looked not unlike a large iſland of ice, except in magnitude and extent.

The 20th about one in the afternoon, the ſouthern head, known by the name of Cape-Horn, came in view, ſounded in 45 fathom water, ſandy bottom. Lat. 55 deg. 10 min. Stood in for the land, which appeared barren as a deſart; and the weather being clear and moderate, the whales were ſporting, and throwing up the water like ſo many fountains, all along the coaſt. They diſcovered a fine bay, and ſtood towards it, but there being little wind, hoiſted out the pinnace, the large and ſmall cutters, and towed cloſe in ſhore; and about nine at night came to an anchor in 25 fathom water.

On the 21ſt, ſent the boats out to ſearch for water, which in the afternoon returned, having been ſucceſsful. Some of the officers who were on board the boats killed a great number of wild geeſe; they were not indeed ſo large as the geeſe in England, but much handſomer. The ſhip was land-locked on every ſide, ſo that no wind could blow to hurt her. The country yielded a ſmall quantity of wild cellery, and at ſome diſtance from the ſhore diſcovered a kind of trees, whoſe bark taſted like pepper. Theſe trees have obtained the name

Digitized by Google

name of Winterania Aromatica, in compliment perhaps to captain Winter, who was the firſt who brought a quantity of their bark from the ſtraits of Magellan into England. There are trees, however, of a ſimilar kind in almoſt every iſland in the Weſt-Indies, the bark, fruit, and leaves of which have a fine aromatic flavour, and are uſed both in food and phyſic. It appears ſurprizing, that trees ſo like in quality, ſhould grow in ſuch oppoſite climates; and yet thoſe which grow in the Weſt Indies can by no ſort of culture be brought to live in England, except in the ſtove.

Though the ſhips that paſſed the ſtraits of Magellan, experienced great hardſhips in navigating that narrow ſea, and were expoſed to innumerable dangers, owing to the ſtrong tides, and uncertain weather, yet our navigators, by rounding Cape-Horn, eſcaped all theſe inconveniences. The weather was fine, though ſomewhat cold, and by a diligent ſearch, they found wood as well as water, ſufficient to ſupply their wants.

The captain was indefatigable in examining the coaſt. About five or ſix miles from the place where the ſhip rode at anchor, he came to a cove, where he found the frame of a wigwam, or two, in which ſome Indians had formerly reſted, and where they had made a fire, and feaſted upon ſhell fiſh. He likewiſe met with ſome ſea fowl that could not fly, but fluttered

tered upon the ſurface of the water, with great rapidity, and were ſuch ready divers, that though the captain, and the gentlemen who accompanied him, fired ſeveral times, and hit the very ſpot on which they were fluttering, yet they never could kill one of them.

Two or three days after the arrival of the ſhip a canoe came in ſight, with a family of the natives paddling between the iſles, probably in ſearch of limpets and ſhell fiſh. They took little or no notice of the ſhip, and kept at a diſtance; but, in leſs than a week, ſeveral other boats appeared, and ſome of the Indians ventured to come on board. They were not ſuch miſerable beings as ſome heretofore deſcribed. They were indeed naked, all but a ſeal ſkin thrown careleſsly round their ſhoulders, and pinned upon their breaſts with a kind of ſkewer; but they were not dejected.

Some had ornamented their heads with feathers made up in various forms; but every other part of their bodies, except their backs, was without covering, women as well as men. They carried, notwithſtanding, a very healthy appearance; and, except a continual ſhivering, they made no bad figure.

They were painted with a dark red or copper colour from head to foot, intermixed with ſtreaks of other colours upon their arms and thighs.

Their

Digitized by Google

Their wigwams were temporary dwellings, made of the ſlender boughs of trees, arched over like ſo many arbours, and covered with the branches and leaves of Winter's bark tree. In theſe they make their fires and dreſs their meat. In one of them that had been deſerted on the approach of a party of ſailors, there was the leg of a gooſe ready dreſſed, and the remains of ſome fiſh. Their canoes do not differ much from thoſe of the other Americans: they are made of the bark of large trees, put together with great labour, and covered with ſeal-ſkins: but they very little reſemble the canoes in the Tropical Iſlands, being very wide in proportion to their length, and having a quantity of earth in them, on which they make their fires. It ſhould ſeem that theſe canoes are each the property of a ſeparate family, for in every canoe there were women and children.

The men betrayed neither fear nor aſtoniſhment on coming on board: but their reaſon for hiding themſelves on ſhore, was, leſt their women and children ſhould be taken from them, and carried into captivity; a dread which runs through the whole human race, let their ſituation be ever ſo mean, in the place of their nativity. Their language is hoarſe and guttural.

Orders were given, that no purchaſe ſhould be made with them, without giving them clothing

Digitized by Google

clothing in exchange: but there was nothing in their poſſeſſion that they would not ſell; their bows and arrows, their ſpears, their fiſhing-tackle, and utenſils of every kind, all came to market. Whatever was given them to aſſuage their hunger they would eat greedily; and whenever they went off from the ſhip, they conſtantly entertained the company with a dance.

Here the ſhip's company kept their Chriſtmas jovially; and it was not till after ſome days that they could be brought to buſineſs.

The people on board were in no want of freſh proviſions in this place: they found wild-fowl in ſuch abundance that numbers were killed and ſalted down, and not a few kept alive, eſpecially geeſe; and of ſcurvy-graſs and wild-celery, a ſufficient quantity, after the country came to be better known. It being the height of ſummer, the meadows might have been mowed, and the graſs made into hay; and there were many many plants and flowers that were exceeding beautiful, and totally unknown to our European botaniſts.

On the 27th of December the ſhip prepared to ſail; and on the 28th they weighed and put to ſea. Their courſe out of the bay, to which they gave the name of Chriſtmas Sound, was S. by E. and S. S. E. Its latitude 54 deg. 24 min. Long. 289 deg. 00 min.

Digitized by Google

On the 29th Cape Horn, bearing N. 88 deg. Eaſt diſtance five or ſix leagues, they purſued their courſe to the N. E. by N. and N. N. E. half E. till they came off Succeſs-Bay, where the Endeavour anchored in her former voyage, and where the preſent navigators had appointed to rendezvous in caſe of ſeparation from the Adventure: they therefore hoiſted the large cutter out to make ſearch if any token had been left of that ſhip's anchoring there; but no ſuch token having been found, they returned, after cutting the ſhip's name and date of the year on a large tree adjoining to the ſtrand. In the mean while, about thirty or forty of the natives came out of the woods to welcome them on ſhore, one of whom the ſailors remembered. He made motions for knives, but there were very few on board. The people here ſeemed rather ſtouter than thoſe about Chriſtmas Sound.

On the 30th, they directed their courſe to Staten's Land, in which paſſage the whales were ſo numerous and large, that the crew believed there was danger of the ſhip's being overſet by them.

At half paſt nine in the morning they bore away S. E. and got cloſe under a pleaſant long iſle, which appeared to be clothed with a verdure equal to any they had yet ſeen. At half paſt ten they heard a great noiſe, like the lowing of many cattle, but ſoon found that it

was

Digitized by Google

was the roaring of the ſea-lions that harboured upon the coaſt.

The 31ſt, at half after one they came to between the Eaſt ſide of the Green Iſland, and the Weſt ſide of Staten Land; at the diſtance of about three leagues from each: and about 40 of the crew, armed with muſkets and Amſterdam clubs, haſtened to ſhore to kill ſeals. As ſoon as the boats landed, the people on board could ſee the engagement, which was very hot as long as it laſted. Inſtead of ſeals they found an innumerable herd of ſea-lions and lioneſſes baſking on the beach; and in a very ſhort time they ſent the large cutter back with ſeveral old ones, and above 200 young ones. At ſeven in the evening the other boats came off with another freight. Some of the old lions weighed from 700 to 800 lb. weight. The young ones are about the ſize of large bull-dogs. During the whole time of the engagement, there were from 30 to 40 lions in the water cloſe by the launch, roaring, jumping, and ſtanding upright, but afraid to land. Theſe lions yield vaſt quantities of oil; but are very hard to kill, ſome of the large lions having gone off with eight or ten balls in their heads. Some of them meaſured from eight to nine feet in length, and not leſs round the ſhoulders. Their feet, or what the ſailors call their phippers, meaſured from two feet and a half to three feet and a half in length. They have the appearance of lions as

Digitized by Google

they bask upon the rocks; but when lying on the beach, they look more like flocks of sheep, with 20 or 30 large black rams among them. They differ much from those found in the North Seas.—Some of the gentlemen in traversing the country saw bears, but had no time to encounter them. This island is entirely covered with coarse long grass, through which the tracks of sea and land monsters may be traced for many miles. Turkies, bustards, and hawks, were seen upon this island, and several geese were killed upon it. In the evening the boats were hoisted in, and the people employed in assisting the butcher in cutting the blubber from the lions, and casking it up.

Jan. 1, 1775, the whole day was spent in killing lions, penguins, geese, and teals: every little cove upon the Green Island was covered with them. The penguins are accounted good eating; and thousands of them were killed for that purpose. It is desperate work to encounter the lions, without first firing two or three balls into them; for they will spring two or three yards at their assailants, when they find themselves hard pressed.

While the ship rode in this channel the pinnace upon reconnoitering the west coast of Staten Land, brought advice that they had discovered a safe harbour, in which the whole royal navy of England might anchor in safety, and find wood, water, and wild-fowl, sufficient to supply their wants.

On

Digitized by Google

On the 3d, the ſhip's cook boiled no leſs than 300 wild-fowl this day for the ſhip's company, as every one was at liberty to eat what he pleaſed. Several went upon the doctor's liſt, more it ſhould ſeem from gluttony and intemperance, than from the effects of the climate.

On the 4th, came to ſail, the weather fine, temperate, and the ſun ſhining bright, proceeded with a briſk breeze E. S. E.

On the 15th, the weather was hazy, attended with ſleet and ſnow, and exceſſive cold. Loſt ſight of land; but certain to be at no great diſtance from it.

On the 16th, they ſaw land which bore E. It appeared amazingly lofty, mountainous, craggy, and almoſt covered with ſnow; and ſeemed to extend farther to the eaſtward and ſouthward than the eye could carry. The nearer they approached it, the more rugged and craggy it appeared, differing in nothing from that of Terra del Fuego on the weſtern ſide, but in being covered with ſnow. Steering through a ſtrait or paſſage, three or four leagues in breadth, between ſeveral ſmall iſles and the main, in this paſſage many green patches was ſeen upon the land; and the greateſt part of the ſea coaſt was clear from ſnow. While they continued ſailing to the north eaſtward, the land ſeemed in that direction to have no

Digitized by Google

end; insomuch that all the mariners on board were overjoyed, imagining they had now found the Southern Continent of which they came in search. Having cleared the strait, they stood E. by N. the land not above three leagues distant. At nine at night hove to.

On the 17th, at half after three bore away S. E. by E. Wind S. W. At four, course E. half S. the land still winding eastward. At seven hauled up S. S. E. seeing a fine bay to cast anchor, sounded in 45 fathom water, blue mud, and small stones. At nine hoisted out the large cutter, and went on shore with a stand of colours, in lat. 54 deg. S. long. 322 deg. 32 min. E. As soon as they landed, they took possession of the country in the name of their Royal Master, and hoisting an English Jack, fired three vollies of fire-arms, and christened the country GEORGIA. In this bay they found an excellent harbour, had not the head of it been frozen up. The sea fowl which swam in the mouth of the harbour were quite tame; but two monsters which lay on the beach, were frightfully fierce. They were in their general shape not much unlike the sea lions of Green-Island, but much larger; they killed one of them that measured 18 feet, and every way large in proportion; his head resembled the head of a shark, his eyes were fixed in the upper part of his head, and his phippers were armed with claws. He was shot with intent to make a drawing of him. They met with no inter-

Digitized by Google

interruption from the inhabitants, nor any thing that could invite their ſtay. At half after one the boat returned with the monſter on board, and at two they made ſail, ſteering E. S. E.

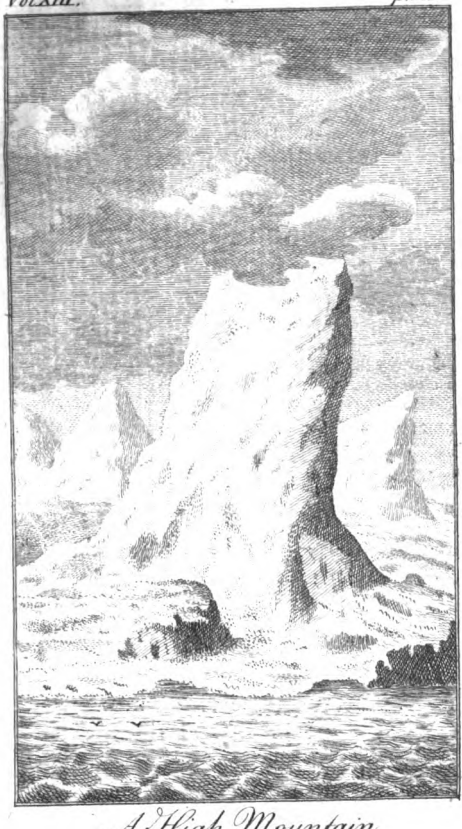
From this time till the 7th of February, they continually coaſted this vaſt country without ſeeing one inhabitant. They had already run from New-Zealand to Cape-Horn, moſtly in 53 and 54; ſo that in that direction, this land cannot extent beyond that line to the northward, how far ſoever it may run to the ſouthward; nor can it, from the 318th degree of eaſtern longitude, to the 360th, run farther to the northward than the parallel in which it was firſt diſcovered, namely, in 54 S. nor indeed ſo far, for captain Cook, quitting this new diſcovered coaſt in lat. 58, run in that direction to the longitude of London, and ſeveral degrees farther. Whatever therefore its extent may be, as no doubt it is very great, if we may be allowed to judge from the aſtoniſhing height of its mountains, there can no part of it be habitable by Europeans; for as the whole circuit of the ſouthern hemiſphere has now been navigated in two or three parallels of high latitude, there can be no place for it within thoſe parallels. It is not improbable that it may riſe to the northward, from a narrow neck, and ſpread as it opens to the ſouthward, to a vaſt extent. Be that as it may, it can never

Digitized by Google

never be a country of any conſiderable commerce, except, like Hudſon's-Bay, for furs, down, and ſkins. It is not, however, likely that it ſhould be deſtitute of inhabitants, though we do not find that any were ſeen upon it; nor did the people on board perceive any ſigns of cultivation, though the ſhip ſailed frequently within two or three leagues of land; it every where appeared rocky and mountainous: but it ſome places, the mountains roſe higher than even Mr. Foſter, who had traverſed the moſt mountainous parts of Europe, had ever before beheld. A drawing of one, among many others, is annexed, which, roſe ſeventeen miles above the horizon, and whoſe top reached higher than the clouds. It was ſituated about the 59th degree of ſouthern latitude, and in eaſt longitude 330 degrees nearly.

By the courſe they ſteered, the ſhore appears to be very irregular, but, in general, trending to the ſouth eaſt, as far as the mountains juſt mentioned; though they coaſted it along in almoſt all directions, from the 14th of January, to the 7th of February, when having loſt ſight of it for two or three days, the weather being piercing cold, and the crew but poorly clad, the captain gave orders to ſtand to the eaſt.

Beſides the horrid appearance the different views of the land exhibited, and the workings, and



A High Mountain.

Google

Digitized by Google

and bearings of the ſhip, nothing remarkable happened in this long cruiſe, except that on the third of February, three or four days before they left the land, they paſſed through a portion of ſea, the water of which was as white as milk; this was about the 59th degree of latitude, and at no great diſtance from the towering mountains already noticed. They ſounded, ſuppoſing the ſhip in ſhallow water; but found no bottom. The water, when taken up in a bucket, and compared with other water, retained none of its milky colour, but ſhowed in every reſpect like the ordinary ſea-water. This, however, is not the firſt obſervation of the kind.

When the ſhip took her departure from this continent, February 7, her longitude was 341 deg. E. and her lat. 58 deg. S. nearly, and on that day ſhe compleated her circuit round the globe, being then in the longitude of the Cape of Good Hope, from whence they ſet out. In this latitude ſhe kept ſailing without any remarkable deviation till the 15th of February, when the captain changed the courſe, ſteering a little more to the northward, in ſearch of Bouvet's Land, and traverſed from the 57th to the 54th degrees, till the 19th, when in lat. 54 degree, they fell in with many ſigns of land, but next day all thoſe ſigns diſappeared. They then bore away E. by N. departing, however, in many directions, as ſigns and circumſtances aroſe, till on the

Digitized by Google

the 13th of March, in lat. 41 deg. 57 min. long. 24 deg. E. they began to cruiſe for two iſlands, reported to have been ſeen nearly in that ſituation; but, not ſucceeding, they continued their courſe to the Cape of Good Hope.

They had now been near 40 days in their paſſage from Georgia, to the Cape of Good Hope, without a ſight of land.

On the 17th, five ſail came in ſight, and on catching a breeze bore down to hail them. They hoiſted out the great cutter, and ſent an officer on board for news; who, upon his return, brought the melancholy account of the boat's crew of the Adventure being killed and eaten by the cannibals of New Zealand. The ſhip from which they received this intelligence was a Dutch Eaſt Indiaman from Bengal, who upon being told that they had been in no European port ſince November 1772, offered them whatever they ſtood in need of, either for repairs or refreſhments: but being in no immediate want, they very politely declined the obligation. This day was Friday with the Dutchman, but Saturday with our navigators, having gained a day by running to the eaſtward. The land they firſt made proved to be Cape Legullas.

In their paſſage from Cape Legullas to Table Bay, they met with ſeveral heavy gales, in

Digitized by Google

in which their masts, sails, and rigging, being much decayed, suffered exceedingly.

On the 20th they came in sight of Table Land, and on the 21st they moored in the bay, in sight of many ships of different nations, where they soon heard the deplorable story of the Adventure's boat's crew being eaten by the cannibals, confirmed.

Here they staid till April the 27th, to repair the ship and recruit their stores.

At the Cape, the curiosity of all nations was excited to learn the success of their discoveries, and in proportion to the earnestness of the solicitations, wherewith the common men were pressed, by foreign inquisitors, they took care to gratify them with wonderful relations. Hence many strange stories were circulated abroad, before it was known at home, whether the ship had perished at sea, or was upon her return to Europe.

The captain lost no time in putting all things in a condition to complete the voyage; and the Dutton Indiaman being in readiness to put to sea, they took their departure together on the 27th of April. On the 15th of May they arrived at St. Helena; on the 21st they again proceeded in company, but parted at Ascension the 28th, the Resolution having touched there, to take in turtle, while the Dutton continued

tinued her courſe. On the 11th of June they croſſed the line; on the 14th of July they anchored at Fyal, one of the Weſtern Iſles; and on the 31ſt of July, 1775, arrived at Spithead; all in good health, having loſt only one man by ſickneſs, and three by accidents, in this long and hazardous voyage.

FINIS.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google


Digitized by Google


Digitized by Google

FORD UNIVERSITY LIBRARIES
TANFORD UNIVERSITY LIBRARI
NIVERSITY LIBRARIES · STANF
BRARIES · STANFORD UNIVER
SITY LIBRARIES · STANFORD
ARIES · STANFORD UNIVERSITY
NFORD UNIVERSITY LIBRARIES
UNIWINU UD UNIVERSITY LIBRARI
Digitized by Google

LIBRARIES · STANFORD
B4
1774
· STANFORD UNIVERSITY LIBRA
V.12-13
LOCKED STACKS
UNIVERSITY LIBRARIES · STAN
NFORD UNIVERSITY LIBRARIES · S
ERSITY LIBRARIES · STANFORD U
ARIES · STANFORD UNIVERSITY
LIBRARIES · STANFORD UNIV
· STANFORD UNIVERSITY LI